Discursive Construction of National Identities in the Media: Scotland and its Others

Pille Petersoo

PhD

The University of Edinburgh

2005



Declaration:

I hereby declare that this thesis is all my own work. All consulted resources have been acknowledged and referenced appropriately.

Pille Petersoo
March 2005

TABLE OF CONTENTS

TABLE OF CONTENTS 3

ABSTRACT 6

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS 7

1. INTRODUCTION 9

2. NATIONAL IDENTITY 13

2.1. Identity as a social construct 13

2.2. Identity and otherness 14

2.3. National identity and the Other 15

2.4. Various Others 18
2.4.1. Internal others 22
2.4.2. External Others 25

2.5. Some critical remarks about the concept of the Other 29

2.6. Concluding remarks 30

3. MEDIA AND IDENTITY 32

3.1. The role of media in society 32
3.1.1. Mass media production 33
3.1.2. Mass media content 39
3.1.3. Reception of mass media 44
3.1.4. Concluding remarks 48

3.2. Media and national identity 49
3.2.1. Role of mass media in nation building 51
3.2.2. Role of mass media in nation preserving 54

3.3. Concluding remarks 56

4. IDENTIFYING SCOTLAND 57

4.1. National identity in Scotland 57

4.2. Media in Scotland 59
4.2.1. National media? 61
4.2.2. Defining Scottish media 64
4.2.3. Scottish national broadsheets 76

4.3. Concluding remarks 77

5. METHODOLOGY 79

5.1. Quantitative text analysis **80**

5.2. Qualitative text analysis **82**
5.2.1. Analysing discursive construction of national identities 88

5.3. NVivo Research tool **95**

5.4. Visual sociology **96**
5.4.1. Visual methodologies 98

5.5. Interviews **103**

6. DATA CORPUS 104

6.1. Headlines **104**

6.2. Leader articles **107**
6.2.1. The role of leader articles 110
6.2.2. Who reads leader articles anyway? 111
6.2.3. Writing the leader articles 113

6.3. Editorial/political cartoons **114**
6.3.1. Defining political cartoons 115
6.3.2. The role of political cartoons 117
6.3.3. Reception of cartoons 118
6.3.4. Content of cartoons 120

6.4. Compiling the data corpus **123**
6.4.1. Time frame 123
6.4.2. Newspapers 125
6.4.3. Data sampling 125

7. *HOMO NATIONALIS* AND *HOMO EXTERNUS* 129

7.1. Headlines **129**

7.2. Discursive constructions of *homo nationalis* **133**
7.2.1. *Homo Scotus* 134

7.3. Discursive construction of *homo externus* **142**
7.3.1. England and the English 142
7.3.2. Wales 157
7.3.3. Irish/Ireland 164
7.3.4. *Homo Britannicus* 166
7.3.5. Europe 176
7.3.6. The World 181

7.4. Concluding remarks **185**

8. NATIONAL DEIXES 187

8.1. The personal deixis '*we*' **188**
8.1.1. Personal deixis 'we' in the media 189
8.1.2. The personal deixis 'we' in the Scottish media. 191
8.1.3. Concluding remarks about the use of personal deixis 'we' 200

8.2. The use of other deictic notions **202**

8.2.1. People 202
8.2.2. History 207
8.2.3. Nation 211
8.2.4. Country 216

8.3. Concluding remarks 218

9. SCOTTISHNESS IN POLITICAL CARTOONS 219

9.1. Analysis of cartoons 222

9.2. Concluding remarks 243

10. CONCLUSION 244

11. APPENDICES 251
11.1. Leader article data corpus 251
11.2. Political cartoons data corpus 254
11.3. Interview data corpus 256
11.4. Chronology of history 257
11.5. Newspaper circulation in Scotland and the United Kingdom 261

REFERENCES 262

Abstract

The thesis analyses the discursive construction of national identities in the media, using Scotland as the case study. It focuses on the dialectic of the national Self and its Others and looks at national identity construction in two main Scottish broadsheets, the *(Glasgow) Herald* and the *Scotsman*. The two key discourse moments chosen for analysis are the 1979 and 1997 devolution referenda in Scotland.

The thesis has three main strands of analysis. Firstly, the thesis looks at the Self/Other dialectic in the media, more specifically in leader articles. It challenges the view that the Other is always negative and stresses the role of positive Others in national identity formation. The aim of the analysis is to identify various significant Others in the discursive construction of Scottishness. While analysing the Self/Other dialectic in the media, two other research themes emerged and were incorporated into my research. Thus secondly, the thesis looks at the complex and often ambiguous use of various national deixes in the Scottish media, focusing on personal pronoun 'we', and other important deixes like 'people', 'nation', 'country', 'land', 'history' etc. Thirdly, as it emerged that comment is contained just as much in political cartoons than in leader articles, the thesis uses elements of visual sociology (including content and semiotic analysis) to look at the representations of Scottishness in political cartoons in a number of Scottish and British daily newspapers.

The thesis combines elements of discourse analysis, content analysis, visual sociology, nationalism theory and media theories in order to achieve these goals and hopes to achieve a better understanding of the Self/Other dialectic and the role of national deixes in national identity building and preserving.

Acknowledgements

Like any piece of research and writing, this thesis would not have been written if had not been for the support of many people during the last years.

First of all, I want to thank my family – my mum Helju, dad Enn, and sister Merle, but also the extended Petersoo and Meresmaa families. I am proud to say I am the first doctor – of academic kind – in my family, and I hope this compensates for not being at home much during the last few years.

I owe a lot to my supervisors David McCrone, Michael Rosie and John MacInnes. It was a privilege and honour to have David as my first supervisor, and his academic, as well as financial support have been crucial. Michael must be the coolest and most patient supervisor one can dream of and was my first port of call in moments of crisis and for feedback on my writings. John, my initial first supervisor, was the one to invite me along to the media group, from which I benefited enormously. Being able to work as part of a close-knit academic research group helped to orient and focus my research and made it much more enriching. Other members of the media group – James Kennedy and Susan Condor (Lancaster) – were also inspirational. Sue Renton provided invaluable administrative support over the years.

Thanks to all my friends back home in Estonia for being there and making me always feel welcome at home, even after all those years away. I am especially thankful to Erika Ellamaa, Liina Jääts, Margit Markus, Anu Ots, Margit Sarv, and Rutt Tambet, as well as Heigo Raadla. My many lecturers at my original *Alma Mater,* University of Tartu, were important in generating the early interest in pursuing an academic career. Prof Marju Lauristin, Prof Rein Taagepera, Prof Raivo Vetik, and Dr Vello Pettai were especially memorable.

My many friends in Edinburgh have played a very important role. My co-students and office mates have provided lots of social and intellectual stimulation that was crucial for finishing my doctorate: Anna Efstathiou, Aybike Hatemi, Jinsang Hwang, Kiheung Kim, Dimitra Laspia. Many other friends in Edinburgh deserve a mention – especially Nicola McEwen, Katherine Charsley, Gill Haddow, and Kweku Ampiah were there for me at various moments of time and provided necessary academic inspiration when needed. A number of other people made sure I had a wonderful – and very cosmopolitan – social and academic life during my five years as a

postgraduate student in Edinburgh, which kept me sane and going during these years: Galina Andreeva, Ruken Cakici, David Córdoba, Jairo Criollo, Paul Fitch, Grigori Fursin, Guro Højland, Georgios Karyotis, Angeles & Rafael Lizama, Mika Murakami, Farah Nushaiwat, Svein Reid, Emlyn Scott, Tina Scott, Ada & Mauricio Solana, Amanda Taylor, Ruxandra Trandafoiu, Annemieke Walker, to name just a few. And my friends from 'MacEstonians' network – especially Helen Niidas, Virve Vihman, Tõnis Kriisa, Maarika Traat and lately also Merilin Miljan – deserve a mention for giving an Estonian dimension to my Scottish experience. Thanks to Tom Ball for proofreading the thesis chapters before heading off. The friendship of all of you has been invaluable.

I also wish to thank the British Council (especially Alison Kanbi from Edinburgh), who administered my FCO/Chevening scholarship that brought me initially to Edinburgh back in 1998. My PhD studies were funded by the ORS, Faculty postgraduate scholarship and the Leverhulme Trust. And the news about the ESRC post-doctoral fellowship made the writing up process a lot easier by lifting the pressure of imminent future decisions.

Last, but not least – I wish to thank my examiners Jonathan Hearn (Edinburgh) and Steve Reicher (St Andrews) for their constructive criticisms and comments at my *viva voca* in November 2004. I have tried to incorporate these in this final version.

1. Introduction

I grew up in Estonia. This small Baltic state had been part of the Soviet Union since 1941, as a result of the 1939 Molotov-Rippentrop Pact, the subsequent Soviet invasion and mock elections. Despite heavy Russification attempts throughout the Soviet era, Estonians remained very sure of their distinct Estonian identity. Although it was an 'occupied nation, having its economy, legal rights and mass public culture in the hands of the invader' (Guibernau 2004:130), Estonians could still be called a nation. As an Estonian, I grew up speaking Estonian, playing with Estonian kids, reading Estonian books and following Estonian media. Although it now seems racist, as a child we were told not to run like a Russian, not to shout like a Russian, etc. I did not have a single Russian friend, although almost half of the capital Tallinn's residents were Russian-speaking (and roughly one third of the total population of Estonia). We went to Estonian schools, they went to Russian schools. In summer camps, the kids were supposed to mix. We never did. They were Russians, we were Estonians, and we were very much aware of that crucial distinction. They were speaking a different language that we were taught at school as a foreign language, and which we learnt only reluctantly. They were noisier, livelier, more extrovert. They were the Other.

Estonia regained independence in 1991, after a failed *coup d'état* in Moscow. In 1992-1993, I spent a year in Denmark as an exchange student. I lived with a Danish family and attended a Danish school. As Estonia had just re-entered the world arena of nation-states a year earlier, the knowledge about the country was poor, even in geographically close Denmark. Although look-wise I blended into Denmark smoothly, I remained an exotic feature. Apart from facing questions like 'do you have colour television in Estonia' and 'have you seen a microwave before' (the answer to both was yes), I was also asked 'what is the favourite food in Russia' or whether it is difficult to read Cyrillic. Shocked that I could be confused with Russians, I offered long explanations, that we do not speak Russian, but Estonian. And that we are not Orthodox, but Lutheran Protestant. I was making a clear distinction between 'us' Estonians and 'them' Russians. But that was not all. I always added that the Estonian language is not even related to Russian, but to Finnish. I also tried to insist that Estonians are rather similar to Danes, who ruled the country some centuries ago. After

all, just like in Denmark, the Estonian staple diet includes boiled potatoes, pork and rye bread, and even liver pate.

That year in Denmark made me very much aware of the Self/Other dialectic. As I was forced to be reflexive about my Estonianness, I realised that national identity is not just 'there', but that it is very much construed in relation to what one is not. It also made me realise that these Others that I kept comparing myself to as a representative of my tiny Estonian nation, are not just negative, but also positive.

I spent just one year in Denmark, and at the end of the year my Danish was much better than my Russian, which I was taught for 11 years at school. The difference, I imagine, was that I did not try to resist learning an 'other language' Danish as I had, collectively with my fellow Estonians, tried to resist learning Russian, the language of our negative external (and internal) Other. The way the Other is perceived certainly does matter.

As I note in the next chapter, the concept of the Other is increasingly popular in the nationalism literature. A number of theories stress the role of the Other in national identity formation and maintenance. But somehow these theories did not satisfy me. If one is to believe the available literature, there is usually just one Other for any national Self. And, according to this literature, that Other is usually threatening and negative. I want to take issue with those approaches to identity and the Other and suggest that there can be many Others for any nation at the same time, and these Others do not need to be negative – they can also be positive.

What about Scotland? Just like nowadays many people ask me, without prompting, whether all Estonians hate Russians (not true), there seems to be a belief that all Scots hate the English, that England is an significant negative Other for Scotland. Is it true? Does Scotland have any other Others, i.e. is Scottishness defined only – or mainly - against Englishness? This thesis looks at media discourse in Scotland, and how the media engage in the discursive construction of national identities, especially in the context of constitutional change in the UK in the late twentieth century. There are many reasons for that choice of topic, not least my interest to compare the Self/Other dialectic in Scotland and Estonia. To begin with, I was curious whether

Scotland/England/Britain dialectic is comparable to Estonia/Russia/USSR dialectic (itself another research project).

The main emphasis of this thesis is on the forging of Scottishness in the media. Scotland, as all other national communities, is an 'imagined community' (Anderson 1991). These are 'constructed and conveyed in discourse, predominantly in narratives of national culture. National identity is thus the product of discourse' (Wodak *et al.* 1999:22). Nationhood 'involves a distinctive imagining of a particular sort of community rooted in a particular sort of place' (Billig 1995:74). What kind of community and what kind of place is Scotland imagined to be? This thesis will analyse how the mass media in Scotland develop and mobilise national identities, and how the media use and contest Scottishness in 'the various struggles around the formation of a Scottish parliament' (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:x). Of special interest is the Self/Other dialectic in the construction of national identities. Reicher & Hopkins suggest the 'context of division' that devolution has caused 'is bound to lead to a focus on difference and hence a need to identify exactly what it is that renders any one nation different from others' (2001:viii). Is that the case and if yes, then who are the various Others relevant for the Scottish identity? Does England function as a significant Other for Scotland, and if yes, then how is the relationship between them imagined? I will also look at the role of 'Britishness' in the construction of Scottishness. Could 'the propensity of people living in Scotland to claim a stronger sense of Scottishness over Britishness' (Brown *et al.* 1998:211) be explained by the way Britishness is constructed in the media? I will also look at the dialectic of the Scottish national identity and the European identity. The rhetoric of 'Independence in Europe' that the Scottish National Party 'has been brandishing ... for many years' (Nairn 2000:151) is an interesting focus of analysis here. How does the Scottish identity relate to 'Europeanness'? Is there such a thing as a European supranational identity and how is it depicted in Scottish media?

Scotland's position within a larger UK framework arguably enhances 'the role for the press in the nation's sense of itself' (Higgins 2004), rendering Scotland a particularly interesting case study. Connell suggests:

> because references to the nation have been consistently ambiguous throughout the 20th century – as to whether it is a reference to Scotland or Britain – the relation between the media and the nation in Scotland has remained peculiarly contested. An analysis of this contest may potentially offer a revealing perspective on the relation between the media and the nation more generally. (Connell 2003:188-189)

In addition to looking at the Self/Other dialectic, the thesis is concerned with the deictic nature of media language as well as political cartoons. Chapter 8 deals exclusively with deixis, which emerged as a theme when looking at the role of the Other. The role of deixis and the issues at stake are explained in the beginning of Chapter 8. Chapters Five and Six discuss the role of political cartoons and ways of analysing visual data, respectively, and Chapter Nine looks at the depiction of Scottishness in political cartoons.

The chosen methodology is analysis of discourse. The concept is understood here as 'a social construction of reality, a form of knowledge' (Fairclough 1995:18). More specifically, I adopt Stuart Hall's definition of discourse for the purpose of my research. Based on his discussion of 'the West' and 'the Rest', by *discourse*

> we mean a particular way of *representing* [the Self], [the Other] and the relations between them. A discourse is a group of statements which provide a language for talking about – i.e. a way of representing – a particular kind of knowledge about a topic when statements about a topic are made within a particular discourse; the discourse makes it possible to construct the topic in a certain way. (Hall 1992:291)

By constructing a topic in a certain way through a particular discourse, the discourse 'also limits the other ways in which the topic can be constructed' (ibid.). Hall, a cultural theorist, compares his definition of discourse to the sociologists' definition of 'ideology' as 'a set of statements or beliefs which produce knowledge that serves the interests of a particular group or class' (Hall 1992:292). The Self/Other dialectic, the strategic use of deixes in creating various social categories and relations between these categories, as well as various identity representations in political cartoons are all viewed and understood in this thesis as elements of the ideology of (banal) nationalism in modern Scotland.

2. National identity

2.1. Identity as a social construct

The approach in the thesis is social constructionist, i.e. based on an understanding that national identity is not something that just 'is', but it is a sociocognitive construct (Cerulo 1997:390). In doing so, it differs considerably from essentialist understandings of (national) identity that abound especially in earlier nationalism and identity literature. These pay 'insufficient attention to how identity "works" or "is worked", to process and reflexivity, to the social construction of identity in interaction and institutionally' (Jenkins 1996:4). Most contemporary writers on nationalism have accepted the constructed nature of nations and national identities. Hobsbawm (1992:10) emphasises 'the element of artefact, invention and social engineering which enters into the making of nations'. Bhabha (1990:293) writes about the 'cultural construction of nationness[1] as a form of social and textual affiliation'. Concepts like 'imagined community', 'forging a nation' etc., coined by Anderson (1991) and Colley (1995) respectively, have found their way into discourse about nationalism and identities, as has Billig's concept of 'banal nationalism' (1995), discussed later.

Neither nations nor national identities should be viewed as something 'immortal' and everlasting, nor fixed and unchangeable, an idea so dear to nationalists: 'historically speaking, most nations have always been culturally and ethnically diverse, problematic protean and artificial constructs that take shape very quickly and come apart just as fast' (Colley 1996:5). As social constructs, national identities are constantly transforming. They are continually being renewed, transformed, reinterpreted and renegotiated according to changing circumstances and interests. As the social, political and economic conditions of a nation change, the nation is 're-defined in ways that make it relevant under a new set of circumstances and which respond better to the material, symbolic or affective needs of its members' (Triandafyllidou 1998:609). In order to trace such transformations in identity, the current thesis analyses the discursive construction of Scottishness in the media longitudinally, comparing media discourse in 1979 and 1997.

[1] I have used Anderson's neologism 'nationness' throughout the thesis (see 1983:3), and also 'Scottishness' in parallel to 'Scottish identity', 'Britishness' in parallel to 'British identity' etc.

2.2. Identity and otherness

> Consulting the Oxford English Dictionary yields a Latin root (*identitas,* from *idem*, 'the same') and two basic meanings. The first is a concept of absolute sameness: this is identical to that. The second is a concept of distinctiveness which presumes consistency or continuity over time. Approaching the idea of sameness from two different angles, the notion of identity simultaneously establishes two possible relations of comparison between persons or things: *similarity,* on the one hand, and *difference*, on the other. (Jenkins 1996:4)

This definition of identity indicates that identity is 'operative only dialectically, i.e. in connection with its opposite, otherness' (Therborn 1995:229). As similarity and difference are implicit in one another, then one only knows who one is by knowing who one is not (Sampson 1993:155; Cohen 1994:198; Jenkins 1996:3-5; 2000a:7; Neumann 1996:48). Therborn even suggests that because of this important self/other dialectic 'there is a primacy of otherness over sameness in making of identity', that '*Alter* is primary to *Ego*' (1995:229). Identities can only be 'achieved in relation to real or imagined essential others' (Zukier 1996:1114). Taylor elaborates:

> People do not acquire the languages needed for self-definition on their own. Rather they are introduced to them through interaction with others who matter to us – what George Herbert Mead[2] called 'significant others'. The genesis of the human mind is in this sense not monological, not something each person accomplishes on his or her own, but dialogical. (1994:32)

From a sociological perspective all identities are constructed. National identity is no different: 'If nationalism is an ideology of the first person plural, which tells 'us' who 'we' are, then it is also an ideology of the third person. There can be no 'us' without 'them'' (Billig 1995:78):

> Many psychologists and psychoanalysts argue that an infant first learns to think of itself as a separate and unique 'self' by recognising its separation – its difference – from others (principally, of course, its mother). By analogy, national cultures acquire their strong sense of identity by contrasting themselves with other cultures. (Hall 1992:279)

Contrasting, or othering, as I prefer to call it, is an important dimension of national identity, and 'national discourses depend crucially on contrasting which is more widespread than commonly assumed' (Eriksen 2004:57).

---

[2] George Herbert Mead (1934) *Mind, Self and Society from the Standpoint of a Social Behaviourist.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press

2.3. National identity and the Other

A.D. Smith notes in his critical overview of nationalism theories, that there are a number of 'recent theories that emphasise the role of significant Others in the formation of national identities and the oppositional framework of inclusion and exclusion in nationalism' (Smith 1998:13; see also Fürsich 2002:57). The question of the Self and Other has been deemed constitutive of national identity formation (Cohen 1994:198). But what is exactly the role of significant Others in national identity formation? How does the oppositional framework of inclusion and exclusion, of sameness and difference, of the Self and the Other, function? Although these questions have intrigued scholars of nationalism, the relationship between the nation and its Other(s) has not yet been investigated in depth (Triandafyllidou 1998:594). Craib attributes this non-investigation to the differences between older and newer approaches to sociology and identity. He argues that 'it would perhaps be true to say that whereas conventional sociology has concentrated on sameness, more recent and particularly post-modern sociology has concentrated on difference' (Craib 1998:4). The current thesis reflects the 'general tendency in social theory to emphasise change and movement, the relativity of boundaries, the multiplicity of identities and internal diversity, sacrificing cohesion, stability, homogeneity and structure as key concepts' (Eriksen 2004:50).

National identities and nationalism require the existence of the Other. 'The encounter with the Other is certainly crucial', remarks Smith (1998:203). It is a *precondition* of nationalism and national identity. Kamusella has even jokingly noted that without the Other, 'nation- and nation-state-building would be as much possible as clapping of one hand' (1999). Guibernau describes how in the Middle Ages

> through the creation of markets, the intensification of trade, the fighting of wars and the slow but progressive amplification of the state's scope, there emerged a consciousness of forming a community which differed from those of other groups outside. It was precisely at this stage that we can talk about the emergence of nations. (1996:51)

Without the sense of the Other, no sense of national 'us' emerges. And before this consciousness of Otherness, there can be no nationalism. Before nationalism – and awareness of the Other - there is only culturalism. The latter

> referred to a natural conviction of cultural superiority that sought no legitimisation or defence outside of the culture itself. Only when ... cultural values sought legitimisation in the face of the challenge posed by the Other in the late nineteenth century, do we begin to see 'decaying culturalism' and its rapid transformation to nationalism. (Duara 1996:154)

The dialectic of the national Self and Other has not been under extensive scrutiny, and hence there are not many authors who have criticised this position. Bhiku Parekh has contributed to this debate, though, arguing that although 'identity and difference are logically interrelated concepts in the sense that to know something is also to know what it is not', sameness/identity is 'logically and ontologically prior to difference, and the latter cannot be its basis or criterion' (Parekh 1995:256). Although difference is important, it is 'ontologically secondary and derivative' (Parekh 1994:502). It is a chicken-and-egg question: 'identities can only function to exclude and leave out because of their capacity to include and enclose. We lose something important by concentrating on one or the other side of this particular coin' (Craib 1998:8). The current thesis therefore looks both at the discursive construction of sameness and difference, of Scottishness and otherness in the media.

I noted earlier that national identities are social constructs, and are constantly transforming and changing. Consequently, 'each age and society recreates its Others' (Said 1995:332), and we should therefore look at the relationship between the nation and its Others dynamically, over time. Just as identity is not engraved in stone, the role of the Other(s) is not constant either. The intensity of the Other's influence on 'us' varies. Identity, and the Self/Other dialectic, is especially salient as 'a reflection of the uncertainty produced by rapid change and cultural contact' (Jenkins 1996:9). Thus the Other plays an important part during the early stages of identity formation, but also at the times of crisis. According to Therborn,

> Differentiation is a very uneven process over time. It involves certain ruptural moments and stable, durable sentiments of self-other perceptions in-between. In the field of collective identities, the most dramatic and important moments of identification are wars and the breakdown of a given state order. (1995:230)

Indeed, 'making of basic distinctions between "us" and "them" is meat and drink for any propaganda war' (Schlesinger 1991a:62). Extreme crisis, like warfare, but also more peaceful, but nevertheless significant political, social and economic changes, can be a homogenising force for the nation, and at the same time actively cause 'othering'. Eriksen states that 'warfare can serve as a nationally integrating force. Any segmentary oppositions ... within the polity may be postponed and "forgotten" when an external enemy encourages the realisation of the highest level of the system of oppositions' (1992:67). In these instances of social, political and economic crisis there is a pressure to reformulate and redefine the particular identity of the nation. Often the 'old' identity is no longer suitable, and it is then that the significant Other becomes more salient and powerful. The significant Other 'serves in overcoming the crisis because it unites the people in front of a common enemy, it reminds them "who we are" and emphasises that "we are different and unique"' (Triandafyllidou 1998:603).

The character of the Self/Other dialectic and the content of the discourse about the Other have important implications for the otherness of the Other; 'the metaphoric assertions men make about themselves and about others influence their behaviour' (Fernandez 1986:6). Depending on how the national Self draws its boundaries and addresses its Other, 'the consequences for the "Other" will be significantly different in each case' (Duara 1996:163). The rhetoric counts: 'what matters is not the representation of the Other as such but the actual nature of the difference that is constructed' (Delanty 1995:5). The choice is between diversity (the recognition of otherness) or division (the negation of otherness). If the Other is represented as a threatening negative Other to the national Self, the enemy rhetoric may lead to xenophobia and racism against the Other (Delanty 1995:5; Keane 1995:193; Guibernau 1996:4). It would be difficult to sustain neutral or positive Self/Other dialectic in a situation where the difference is always construed in negative and threatening terms.

Whatever the balance of importance between the two aspects of identity, the discussion of the dialectic with the Other is important. Neumann suggests that 'analyses of self/other nexuses hold out the promise of a better understanding of who "the actors" are, how they were constituted, how they maintain themselves, and under which preconditions they may thrive' (1996:168).

2.4. Various Others

The Other and the imagining of otherness is an important and integral part of national identity formation. But

> foreignness is not an undifferentiated sense of 'Otherness'. Obsessively fine distinctions can be made between different groups of foreigners. Indeed, debates and controversies arise about how similar or how different various groups of foreigners are to 'us'. (Billig 1995:80)

In this section, these possible various groups of Others and their role in identity formation are outlined. In order to understand better the role of various Others, some kind of analytical categorisation of different possible Others would be helpful. There are few typologies of Others put forth in nationalism literature. For instance, Sampson (1993) has differentiated between *real others, imagined others, historical others* and *generalised others*. Triandafyllidou (1998) distinguishes between two main types, external and internal significant Others, and further subtypes within these two. Duara (1996) writes about *internal historical Others, potential Others* and *hidden Others*; Hobsbawm (1992) about *present aliens, past aliens,* and purely *notional aliens*. I wish to recommend a different, somewhat simpler typology of Others.

Triandafyllidou (1998:600) writes that 'the history of each nation is marked by the presence of significant others that have influenced the development of its identity by means of their "threatening" presence'. Even though she is correct in noting that the number of Others in the case of each nation is multiple – i.e. the Self in its discourses of identity is continuously negotiating several identities simultaneously - these do not always have to be threatening. Indeed, in her recent book, Triandafyllidou has included a category of 'inspiring' others (2002a), a marked departure from her earlier writings. Identities are always constructed in dialectic with the Other, but this relational opposition does not have necessarily to be antagonistic. Therborn (1995:230) writes that 'identity should not be conceived as just a blank negation of the Other. Identity is also, normally, something positive, an identification *with* somebody or something, after an awareness of separateness, that is'. Thus identities do not have to be perceived as negative and mutually hostile, but they do need to be perceived as separate. As Billig writes again, the images of Others 'tend not to be uniformly scornful. Some foreigners are presumed to be more meritorious that others'

(1995:80). Following these insights, I suggest that significant Others can be either positive or negative.

Apart from the possible positiveness of the Other, the Other does not necessarily have to be on the outside, but may also be an 'internal Other'. Indeed, the ethnically and culturally peripheral minorities often serve as the Other (Neumann and Welsh 1991:30). Or to put it more clearly, 'Significant others may be distinguished as internal, namely, those who belong to the same political entity with the in-group, and as external, namely those that form part of another state' (Triandafyllidou 1998:609). In reality the construction of boundaries between the internal and external Others is more complex. From this I derive another analytical dyad - that the Other can be either internal or external.

It is important to clarify here that in social science literature the 'internal Other' can also refer 'to the subconscious, a phase of the self, or the experience of self-estrangement (e.g. Bakhtin 1981)' (Riggins 1997:4). In this thesis, the internal or external nature of the Other is defined more or less geographically. Also, the Other can be non-national, e.g. an historical event, political institution, a specific collective non-national entity etc. The Other has included 'women, non-western peoples, peoples of colour, people of subordinate social classes, people with different sexual desires' (Sampson 1993:4). Especially the role of women as a potential Other in forging nations and their identities has been recognised recently, resulting in a number of feminist writings on nationalism. For instance, Anthias & Yuval-Davis show in *Woman-Nation-State* (1989) how women are involved in ethnic and national processes as 'signifiers of ethnic/national differences – as a focus and symbol in ideological discourses used in the construction, reproduction and transformation of ethnic/national categories'. Women are also used 'as symbols of national identity in the case of Greek-Cypriot nationalism', for instance (Walby 1996:237). The former British Prime Minister, Margaret Thatcher, is known for singling out the striking miners in 1984/85 as the 'enemy within' the British state (see for instance Fairclough and Wodak 1997), also a non-national Other. This thesis looks mostly at national Others.

To understand better the role of various Others in identity formation, I suggest a simple typology of Others to be used in the following discussion, based on these two dyads: External *versus* Internal and Negative *versus* Positive, resulting in four ideal types of Others (Petersoo 2000). All four types of Others can be relevant for the identity formation at any one time, but they do not have to. Possible Others in identity formation are the following:

THE OTHER	POSITIVE	NEGATIVE
INTERNAL	Positive Internal Other	Negative Internal Other
EXTERNAL	Positive External Other	Negative External Other

A positive Other is used as a positive reference point for 'sameness' and identity, a 'role model' for the national Self in the construction of its nationhood. The difference of 'them' from 'us' is constructed positively or shown to be minimal. Or, at least, a positive Other is an accepted and legitimate part of the wider 'us', the national Self. A negative Other is, on the contrary, related to the 'difference' aspect of the identity. It is an Other *against* whom nationhood is constructed, either in an outright negative way, or by rejection, by claiming that this particular Other has no role or legitimate part in the identity of the national Self. This is where the Freudian 'narcissism of minor differences' sometimes comes to a full play. For example, looking for differences between Scotland and England seems to become more intense and 'grow in importance the more the two societies grow similar' (McCrone 2001a:103).

The definition of somebody or something as positive or negative Other, as internal or external Other, is a process that can have important consequences for the particular Other (see e.g. Delanty 1995:5). And this can be an ambivalent and ambiguous process. For instance, strictly speaking, an internal negative Other is at the same time also external, in a sense that it is marked out as unwelcome, as something that does not belong to the national Self (i.e. the Other is territorially internal but socially external). And *vice versa* – the external Other is socially also internal, as it is perceived as relevant, whether positively or negatively. One can draw parallels here with the ambiguous use of the personal deixis 'we' - often used in political speeches. The 'we' can include the addressee, but does not always do so, e.g. it can designate only the speaker, or the speaker and all the listeners, or the speaker, all listeners and

all other people of the 'imagined community'. I do acknowledge the inherent ambiguity of the external/internal and positive/negative typology, but will nevertheless proceed with it, as it is a useful theoretical tool.

How many of these possible Others are 'in use' or functional at any given moment, and in what way, varies. According to Triandafyllidou, in the course of history 'more than one nation or ethnic group becomes a salient outgroup' influencing the identity formation of the ingroup. But she claims that, at any given time, there is only *one* significant other for each nation which affects the formation and transformation of its identity (Triandafyllidou 1998:600). It seems more reasonable to believe, though, that there is room for more than one Other at any given time. National identity formation should not be seen as a strictly 'monogamous' dialectical affair between one nation and one significant Other, but as a complex interplay between the nation and various Others. Any identity argument *against* one Other can at the same time be an argument *for* another Other (cf. Reicher and Hopkins 2001:84) – thus indicating a possible multiplicity of Others.

As the identity of a nation may be defined and based on a cluster of several different key variables, as language, religion, culture, history etc., each of these aspects may require a different Other. Thus *the basis of otherness* can vary in different situations. Indeed, 'the Other may be defined in any terms of non-identity, family, tribe, ethnicity, class, religion, and so on' (Therborn 1995:233). Although most write about ethnic and national groups as Others, the concept is broader: 'Others may also be women for men, the rich for the poor, Californians and New Yorkers for Midwestern Americans, the young for the old, conservatives for Marxists, tourists for natives, and so on' (Riggins 1997:4). In studies of nationalism it is thus 'certainly not enough to see the Other in terms of his or her ethnicity'.

The dialectic with one Other differs from that with another. 'We adjust our own emerging actions in anticipation of the responses of these various others' (Sampson 1993:106). This different, adjusted dialectic with different Others is also echoed in Triandafyllidou's opinion. She writes that there are 'different conflict dynamics that are developed between the nation and [each] significant other, and the ways in which these condition the development of national identity' (1998:602) - note again the

prevalent assumption, that the Self/Other dialectic is only conflict-driven, that the relationship is always negative.

In order to better understand the role of various Others in the process of nation building and maintaining, I will look at various positive and negative, and external and internal Others, and illustrate the various Others in more detail.

2.4.1. Internal others

2.4.1.1. Negative internal Others

Examples of negative internal Others are numerous. Commonly immigrant groups are the Other *against whom* the identity of a nation is constructed, and who, as a result, 'usually live and work in a climate of discrimination, marginalisation and racism' (Smith 1995:95). Hjerm writes that 'it is even difficult to see how "others" or immigrants ... could ever be viewed in a non-derogatory way' (1998:5.2), as ''Othering' the immigrant is functional to the development of national identity and to achieving or enhancing national cohesion' (Triandafyllidou and Spohn 2003:10).

The function of the identification of internal negative Others has been to homogenise and unify the 'majority' nation. The 'identification and prosecution of *internal enemies* has been a familiar technique of integration for centuries' (Eriksen 1992:64). As Hobsbawm (1992:91) writes: 'there is no more effective way of bonding together the disparate sections of restless peoples than to unite them against outsiders'. As I suggested previously, these 'outsiders' do not have to be spatially outside. An internal Other is usually negative, because it 'disrupts the cultural and political order of the nation, and thus challenges its sense of unity and authenticity,' threatening to 'contaminate' it (Triandafyllidou 1998:603; Triandafyllidou and Spohn 2003:10), to 'undermine the fabric of the nation' (Smith 1995:95).

Especially in Europe, Jews have been an important negative reference point, together with the Roma: 'in common with anti-Semitism, anti-Roma racism is deeply embedded within European culture' (Evans 1996:43). While Jews have been othered because of their religion, then Gypsies' 'nomadic culture has marked them as outsiders' (ibid.). Indeed, the negative otherness of these two groups is so apparent,

that it has led Therborn to say 'the non-European immigrants and refugees have become the Jews and Gypsies' of the right-wing extremists in contemporary Europe (1995:323). Jews, having an 'outstanding history' of negative otherness in Europe, and therefore being 'frequently excluded and ostracised' in the past (Hall 1992:280), can, according to Hobsbawm, even become 'purely notional aliens'. This has happened in Poland, 'where anti-Semitism continues to explain Polish ills in the total absence of Jews' (Hobsbawm 1992:174). In a way, this is the same and the opposite of the idealisation of Baltic Germans in Estonia in their absence. Eriksen writes that

> indigenous or other ethnically distinctive populations ... may serve as negative symbols of the nation. [...] This was clearly the case in Nazi Germany, where Germanness was defined in contrast to the un-Germanness of Jews, Gypsies and Slavs (and still is to some extent). (Eriksen 1992:64; see also the chapter on Germany in Greenfeld 1992)

The negative internal Other can also be another large nationality living within the same political territory. For example, 'in Belgium, Flemish nationalism was constructed against Francophone Walloon cultural as well as economic hegemony' (Woolf 1996:35).

Another example of an internal negative Other are African-Americans in the United States. Hobsbawm writes that '"visible" ethnicity tends to be negative, inasmuch as it is more usually applied to define "the Other" than one's own group' (Hobsbawm 1992:66), and the otherness of African-Americans has until recently been negative. American writer Toni Morrison has argued that 'the very heart and soul of what it means to be American is founded on constructing an accommodating black presence', that American identity 'is constructed on the basis of implicit and necessary comparisons with the African-American' (Sampson 1993:11, 87).

2.4.1.2. Positive internal Others

A positive internal Other is usually a minority, living within the same territory with the majority nation, who is not considered to be a threat to the identity and integrity of the constituent nation.

Not many examples of positive internal Others have been described in nationalism literature. Eriksen writes that sometimes, if not exceptionally, the 'ethnic minority

populations can also be used symbolically ... as metaphors of the nation' (Eriksen 1992:64). Although the previous section established that the othering of immigrants is common and functional to the development of national cohesion, then not all immigrants are perceived as threatening, negative Others:

> With regard to European Union, for instance, citizens of fellow member states are endowed with the same rights and duties as the host country nationals, because they are citizens of the Union. Moreover, these people do not generally suffer from discrimination in the social sphere. Similarly, North Americans and citizens from other industrialised countries may be foreigners in Europe but do not come within the negative stereotype usually associated with immigration. In other words, the process of Othering the immigrant is activated towards specific groups. (Triandafyllidou and Spohn 2003:11)

Minorities can be considered to be a positive Other in case of the same territorial-ancestral descent. For instance, in Greece 'the differentiation between Greeks and "Others" is salient also with regard to immigrants, among whom a distinction is made between those of Greek descent and the "others", the "aliens"' (Triandafyllidou *et al.* 1997). The 'Greek immigrants' 'returning' from Anatolia to Greece, form a positive reference group, part of the wider national imagined Greek 'us'[3]. Such 'resident territorially compact minorities, often of long standing' are present in most, if not all, European countries. In general, such communities are 'generally viewed as "legitimate", if less favoured, co-residents of the national state, who had in earlier periods experienced neglect and discrimination on the part of elites of the dominant ethnie' (Smith 1995:95). In the sphere of nationalism, where 'the universality of ethnic opposition' (Smith 1998:181) is prevalent, being considered 'legitimate, if less favoured', can be considered a positive statement.

I have discussed the positive internal Others in Estonia in much more detail elsewhere (Petersoo 2000). There have always been autochthonous ethnic minorities living on the territory of today's Estonia. Most important have been the Baltic German (*baltisakslased*) community, but also the Swedish communities of the west-coast (*rannarootslased*). Both date back to the thirteenth century (Piirimäe 1997:50). In particular, the German nobility and merchants remained 'despite periodic change in

[3] In reality, the issue was more complex. The 2002 Greek box-office hit 'Touch of Spice' follows a story of one Greek family deported from Istanbul in 1965 for being of Greek ethnicity. However, they were constantly reminded in Greece that they are 'Turks'.

formal suzerainty the key elites in Estonia from the thirteenth to the twentieth century' (Raun 1997:406). This German upper class was deeply resented by the Estonian population. The Estonian columnist Andrei Hvostov has suggested that hatred of the Baltic German is, rhetorically speaking, deeply rooted in Estonian blood (1998:104), that 'lingering Estonian resentment against the Baltic Germans' (Raun 1997:409) cannot be denied. However, some sort of 'Renaissance' of Baltic Germanness, has taken place since Estonia regained its independence in 1991 (Hvostov 1998:109). Writings 'about Germans have become much more positive, recognising for example the contribution of the nobility to the improvement of Baltic agriculture far beyond that of Russia' (Lieven 1993:138). A 1991 study revealed that more than a quarter of Estonian respondents believe that Germany and Baltic Germans have positively influenced Estonian development (Vihalemm and Lauristin 1997:285). This is wholly understandable as 'the massive swing towards Western models naturally brings with it a reappraisal of the role of Baltic Germans who were, after all, for centuries the chief representatives of Western culture in the region' (Lieven 1993:138). Curiously then, an internal Other, previously bitterly resented and no longer even present (Hitler called all Baltic Germans back to Germany during the 1939 *Umsiedlung*), today is valorised and strongly used as a positive Other – making them a purely 'notional' Other.

2.4.2. External Others

2.4.2.1. Positive external Others

A positive external Other is usually a neighbouring nation and/or state not perceived as a threat by the nation in question, but rather as a positive reference point. This Other is used as a role model, a standard that the nation wants to achieve, become like. Again, there are not many examples discussed in nationalism literature, as most authors treat Others as something negative. However, positive external Others play a very important role in Estonia. I have identified three important positive Others in Estonia – Finland, Scandinavian countries and the supranational Other 'Europe' (Petersoo 2000). I will briefly describe them below.

Finland has been a significant positive Other for Estonia. From the beginning of national awakening in the nineteenth century, the Estonian national movement 'was

primarily oriented towards Finland' (Piirimäe 1997:63). The architects of Estonian nationalism felt great admiration for Finland, which was seen as culturally much more emancipated (Jansen 1994:2251). Reasons for this are manifold. Geographical proximity is one factor, but more important has been linguistic proximity. Estonian and Finnish are two of the few non-Indo-European languages spoken in Europe[4]. Together with Hungarian, they are the only three of the Finno-Ugric languages to have their own nation-states. This linguistic and geographical closeness has contributed to the development of Estonian identity. 'Finland was Estonia's *alter ego*' and during the Soviet occupation 'the existence of Finland sustained the idea of a Republic of Estonia, keeping alive the Estonians' vision of what the country may have been had they stood up to the Russians' (Ruutsoo 1995b:177). 'The indigenous features of a Finno-Ugric language and folklore, shared with Finns, helped Estonians maintain an inner distance from the Soviet-Russian, i.e., Byzantine forms of everyday practices during the five decades of occupation' (Lauristin 1997:35), and it was largely due to these cultural Finno-Ugric markers that Estonia 'has remained a distinctive culture-space differentiated from Russia' (Mettam and Williams 1998:369). Another factor related to the Finnish positive external Other was Finnish television. Available in the northern half of Estonia since 1958, and being easily comprehensible to Estonians, it became an 'electronic window on the West' (Kionka and Vetik 1996:136). Access to Finnish TV channels on the other side of the Iron Curtain was a factor 'more important than can be imagined by Europe' (Ruutsoo 1995a:15), as it 'afforded Estonians more information on current affairs and more access to Western culture and thought than any other group in the Soviet Union' (Kionka and Vetik 1996:137).

Scandinavian countries have been another positive external Other instrumental in developing Estonian identity. Estonia has been both under Danish and Swedish rule during its history. Elements of Danish and Swedish cultural heritage are today 'more positively accepted as part of an Estonian identity'; direct contacts with Sweden, Denmark and Finland 'have been a major source of cultural influence ... shaping new patterns of everyday life and new post-modern values' (Lauristin 1997:36). According to a study conducted in 1993, ninety percent of Estonians perceived themselves to

[4] The others are Basque language and Finno-Ugric Hungarian language.

have the highest number of similar cultural features in common with Nordic countries (Kirch and Kirch 1995:52-53).

Finally, Europe has been an important positive external Other in Estonia. Estonia sees itself firmly positioned in Europe. The self-image of the 'membership in the Western cultural tradition of West-European Christianity' is supported by the 'legal and educational systems, developed through the centuries according to Swedish and German traditions' (Lauristin 1997:35)[5]. At the dawn of nineteenth century, the 'Young Estonia' movement popularised the slogan 'Let us be Estonians, yet become Europeans', 'a conscious effort to define Estonian culture alongside German culture as a part of the general European cultural stock' (Estonian Institute 1997). Indeed, the so-called 'return to Europe' was 'the keynote of Baltic national feeling since its rebirth in the 1980s' (Lieven 1993:374). 'Return to Europe' and Estonia's will to be 'accepted again by the West and to be recognised as an integral part of the Western cultural realms is a more substantial driving force in [Estonia's] development than mere economic or political motivation could ever be' (Lauristin 1997:29). The accession of Estonia to the European Union in May 2004 has, in many ways, accomplished these goals.

2.4.2.2. Negative external Others

A negative external Other is usually a neighbouring state. For example, Triandafyllidou describes 'rival nations (or nation-states), neighbours of the ingroup, which contest some part of the ingroup's homeland or which are in possession of lands that the ingroup claims to be part of its own territory, namely the nation's irredentia'. The national Self is afraid that the external Other is going to 'challenge the territorial and/or cultural integrity of the nation from "without"' (Triandafyllidou 1998:603). This also suggests that the dialectic between 'us' and 'them', should be viewed in the context of international relations (Neumann and Welsh 1991; Triandafyllidou 1998).

---

[5] Note how the distinctiveness of legal and educational systems is emphasised in the context of expressing the distinctiveness of Estonian national identity. This is very similar to the way the distinct legal, religious and educational systems are referred to in Scotland when distinguishing latter's distinctiveness from England.
Lauristin is also appealing to Sweden and Germany as positive Others, both serving as a link between Estonianness and Europeanness.

There are several examples of negative external Others in the history of European nationalisms. The 'fear of enemies (barbarians or non-Greeks) and hatred of them' had their origins in pre-modern Greece (Harle 1990:5). Elsewhere in Europe, France seems to be one of the most 'popular' negative Others. Greenfield suggests that France was 'ultimately responsible for the emergence of German nationalism':

> France gave Germans the Enemy, against whom all the strata of the disunited German society could unite, on whom everyone could blame their misfortunes and vent their frustrations. Hatred of France inspired the uncertain patriotism within the German breast; it provided this new as yet flickering passion with a reason for existence and with a focus. (1992:372)

France also served as a negative Other for Britain in general, and for England in particular – and vice versa. It was 'the resentment toward England that shaped the ideological foundations of the French national consciousness' (Greenfeld 1992:180), and in the eighteenth century 'Britain developed many of its modern symbols of nationhood in conscious contradiction to French styles of nation-making' (Billig 1995:81). For Britain, France was the negative external Other, the Enemy that 'brought Britons, whether they hailed from Wales or Scotland or England, into confrontation with an obviously hostile Other and encouraged them to define themselves collectively against it' (Colley 1996:5). A British identity was 'superimposed over an array of internal differences in response to contact with the Other, and above all in response to conflict with the [French] Other' (Colley 1996:6). Colley describes the relationship between France and Britain: 'like another famously unhappy couple, the British and the French had their teeth so sunk into each other in these years (and long after) that they could neither live together peacefully, nor ignore each other and live neutrally apart' (Colley 1996:1,3).

Chapter 7 discusses the idea of Scottishness as partially based on a negation of Englishness. Meanwhile, another more recent example is the revival of Greek nationalism, triggered by an external Other – Macedonia. Triandafyllidou analyses 'how and why the Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia [FYROM] has represented an external significant other for Greece in the period 1991-1993 and the effect that this has had on Greek national identity'. Apparently the transformation of Macedonia 'into a nation-state has been perceived by Greece as a challenge to its

cultural distinctiveness and territorial integrity' (Triandafyllidou 1998:604) and forced the Greeks to redefine their Greekness. Greece itself has figured as a negative external Other in Turkey, alongside the Armenians in eastern Anatolia (Göl 2005).

2.5. Some critical remarks about the concept of the Other

It is important to bear in mind that although sameness and otherness are two sides of the same identity 'coin', the dialectic with the Other is just one aspect of (national) identity formation. 'Modern nations and nationalism involve many more elements than a heightened concern for monitored boundaries and the exclusion of "foreigners"' (Smith 1998:83). Therborn, though suggesting that *Alter* is primary to *Ego*, admits that 'the experience of the Otherness of the Other is intimately related, but irreducible to the discovery and the making of the self' (1995:230).

If the *essence* of identity becomes its difference from the Other, if identity-forging is focused on opposition to the Other, this cannot be viewed positively. Delanty calls this 'a pathological form' of identity (1995:5), which

> fetishes difference and discourages inter-communal borrowing. It encourages the community to pay far more attention to how and how much it differs from the others than to whether or not it is true to itself. It also tends to stress only those aspects of it in which it differs from others and to distort and falsify its way of life. (Parekh 1994:503)

This kind of quest for identity 'leads to paradoxes and proves self-defeating' (Parekh 1995:256). Using enemy images/negative Others in order to increase the cohesiveness of the Self can be dangerous:

> certain analyses – Huntington's (1993) essay on the clash of civilisations comes to mind – seem to offer 'othering' as a piece of practical advise for how to glue a particular human collective together. Integration and exclusion are two sides of the same coin, so the issue here is not *that* exclusion takes place, but *how* it takes place. If it is proposed to achieve integration at the price of active othering, that price seems to be too high to pay. Analyses of collective identity formation should contribute, however timidly, to our living in difference, and not to some of us dying from otherness. (Neumann 1996:168)

There have not been many thorough analyses of the character of the Other and the dialectic of nations and their Others. I wish to argue against the prevailing and widespread assumption that the Other is a negative contrast only, and explore further

the existence and role of positive Others. As identity consists of two aspects – sameness and difference – the Other should not only be seen functional in difference, but also in similarity. No claims are made that the Self/Other dialectic is the one and only aspect of identity formation process worth studying: 'Collective identities emerge as *multifaceted*, and must be studied as such' (Neumann 1996:167).

2.6. Concluding remarks

There are two main aspects of national identity that are important for the current research. Firstly, that national identity is constructed socially through discourse. Secondly, that national identity is constructed in Self-Other dialectic. Based on those two main premises, I suggest a following operational definition of national identity for this research, based on a definition given by Luther (2000):

> National identity is a specific form of social identity embodying shared core values and norms associated with the specific nation, enclosing its sense of perceived differences and similarities vis-à-vis other nations, and having been discursively constructed over an extended historical time period.

Thirdly, I suggest that national identity is partially constructed and maintained in the media and by the media. The media are one important arena where the nation is daily reproduced. But what is exactly the relationship between the media and the discursive construction of national identities and the Others? How do we bridge the media, national identities and the Other? What is the role of mass media in the inter-ethnic relations and in sustaining the Self/Other dialectic? There are a number of studies that have attempted to throw light on that relationship. Schneider (2001) analyses othering strategies in German discourse; Hargreaves (1996) describes the deviant construction of immigrant suburbs as so-called *Banlieues* in the French media; Triandafyllidou (1999) discusses the discourse of nation and immigration in the Italian press. These studies support the hypothesis that mass media provide the decisive and possibly the best site to examine the creation of the Other in society, as the mass media construct the national identity by means of exclusion (Said 1995; van Dijk 1997; Chung 2000:99; Fürsich 2002:65). Ruxandra Trandafoiu's research confirms that

> the media create collective identity, but they do it by distinguishing the 'in-group' from the 'out-group' in order to reinforce group boundaries. The media contribute to nation building, but by reproducing positive stereotypes of 'us' and negative stereotypes of 'them.' (2004:68)

While this confirms the tendency to operate by means of exclusion, again only the negative othering is noted. In the Scottish media, explicit negative 'othering' is less common, but negative stereotyping of the Other takes the form of attributional bias (a concept introduced by Luther 2000). However, positive othering is not uncommon either, as can be seen in my analysis of Scottish media in Chapter 7.

Edward Said's influence cannot be underestimated here. His seminal study *Orientalism* has inspired many researchers to use media texts, in addition to literature and anthropology, in order to analyse the way the knowledge about the Other is constructed through discourse (Fürsich 2002:65). The next chapter will look at the role of the media in society in general, and in nation building and preserving in particular, in more detail.

3. Media and identity

3.1. The role of media in society

Reicher & Hopkins state that 'nations, nationalism and national identity are all around us', making nationhood 'a central aspect of our social world' (2001:vii). Similar claims can be made about the media; just like nations and national identity, the media are all around us. In his sociological introduction to media power, McCullagh states that 'we live in media-saturated societies' (2002:1). The mass media have become 'the cultural epicentre' of our world (Castells 1996:336). From the free *Metro* on public transport, to a choice of newspapers and magazines in pubs, cafes, airplanes and in doctors' waiting rooms, print media are everywhere, not to mention TV. But what functions do the media serve in society? What is the relationship of the media to 'the broader social context in which they operate' (Steenveld 2002:63)?

This study concentrates on media output rather than media effects. It will focus on the discursive construction of national identities in the media, and only briefly on how media discourse actually affects the way its consumers formulate their understanding of nationness. This approach has been prevalent in sociological studies of the media, where analysis has focussed on media texts, 'with the common assumption that media's meanings are to be found in media's messages' (Spitulnik 1993:295). An alternative view is suggested by McLuhan, who famously insists that 'the medium is the message' (1964). Ideally, of course, mass media analysis should encompass all main dimensions: production, content, and reception. Although text-based studies 'may reveal "hidden" aspects of media messages,' they usually 'do not help us understand why such texts are appealing or popular, or how they are consumed by actual audiences' (Gauntlett 2002:17). Hence, for thorough understanding of the role of the media, other aspects of media in addition to media texts/content need to be studied, as 'this picture is incomplete without an analysis of the culture of media production, the political economy and social history of media institutions, and the various practices of media consumption that exist in any given society' (Spitulnik 1993:295). Indeed, some scholars even suggest that study of media content should be relegated to secondary position and recommend instead 'the analysis of social practices involved in production, distribution, and reception as the best means of understanding the social role of texts' (Newcomb 1991:69). However, although I

cover the aspects of media production and distribution, and discuss the reception of the media, the main research focus remains the content of the media.

3.1.1. Mass media production

News production, i.e. 'the processes of news-gathering, sifting, and editing, and the administration of news and entertainment organisations,' is of interest, as 'it helps us to understand what pressures shape the commodity presented to the public' (Curran and Seaton 1997:276). On the production side, there are several social forces that influence how the news media operate and affect the particular character of mass media content. Some of these social forces are outlined below.

3.1.1.1. The power and influence of media sources

Media sources are individuals and organisations that, either directly or indirectly, influence the news by providing information to the media, and appear or are quoted in news stories. The significance of sources lies with the important way in which they can influence stories through 'the selective and well-timed leak, through the off-record briefing, and through a range of other methods of information control that do not necessarily require them to be openly identified' (McCullagh 2002:66). There are debates about whether some sources actually control the content of the print and broadcast media. McCullagh suggests that 'powerful groups are central sources of news and, while they do not automatically control the ways in which issues are defined in society, they have considerable influence on the process', leading to 'a significant degree of convergence' and 'limitations on the range of interpretations of the stories' (2002:71-72).

3.1.1.2. The politics of media personnel/organisation

The ideological orientation of the media organisation influences heavily the content of its newspapers. In most countries, national newspapers are identified with particular political and ideological positions. In the case of leader articles, which are the focus of this research, the assumption is that 'the ideologies of journalists somehow influence their opinions, which in turn influence the discourse structures of the opinion articles' (van Dijk 1998:21). The study of media discourse in Britain and Scotland confirms

that ideological orientation of the media organisation influences the content. For example, the *Guardian*, the 'left-leaning national prestige daily' (Billig 1995:48), was supportive of Scottish devolution in both 1979 and 1997, whereas the right-of-centre *Telegraph* traditionally supports the Conservatives and was accordingly against devolution on both occasions. The main Scottish broadsheets were pro-devolution on both occasions, although in 1979 the *Scotsman* was more strongly 'pro' than the *Glasgow Herald* (Brown 1979:68). Brown writes that 'most of the papers took up positions on the question of a Scottish Assembly as proposed by the Scotland Act 1978 and regarded the campaign leading up to the referendum on 1 March 1979 as a major news story' (1979: 64). He also found that political orientation of the media organisation (i.e. whether the newspaper was pro- or anti-devolution) influenced the content of the newspapers, especially the amount of coverage dedicated to the devolution referendum. When analysing the Scottish morning papers by allocation of space (measured as a percentage of the total editorial space available in each paper), and the papers' support for devolution, Brown found a correlation between the ideological stance of the newspaper, and the content of the media, as suggested above.

3.1.1.3. The relationship between media ownership and control

Although it is often assumed that those who own the media also control the content of the media, recent research has shown that this is not always the case. McCullagh (2002:78) argues that

> it is not possible, for the most part, to read particular examples of media production as direct reflections of the interests of owners. Although 'corporations dominate cultural landscape' (Golding and Murdock 1996:16), the manner in which this translates into cultural control is not as direct and undeviating,

as some authors assume. Indeed, for most proprietors, media organisations are simply another part of their industrial or commercial empire and 'the ideological substance and stance of the organisation is a matter of indifference to its owners (as long, that is, as it produces the required level of profit)' (McCullagh 2002:78-79). In reality, the situation is often more varied and complex. For example, the Australian media magnate Rupert Murdoch is widely known to influence his papers' opinions, even 'if the nature of that influence is not in the academic sense researchable'[6] (Seymour-Ure

[6] Rupert Murdoch's News International owns, among others, the *Sun,* the *Times,* the *Sunday Times,* and the *News of the World.*

1998b:45). But while the Scottish edition of Murdoch's *The Sun* announced on 23 January 1989 on its front page across a giant Saltire that it now supports the SNP and Scottish independence (Smith 1994:108-109), the London-based edition remained pro-Thatcher (and thus anti-devolution and anti-independence). Although the then editor of the *Scottish Sun*, Bob Bird, denies it was a commercially-driven decision, 'many observers remain sure that this "conversion" could not have been approved by News International without the evidence that sales could indeed be boosted' (Smith 1994:109)[7]. The real task of most newspapers is 'to return annual profits' dividends to head office' (Smith 1994:5-6).

In some other papers, the role of the proprietors is openly dissociated from the editing of the paper. For example, the *Guardian* is owned by the Scott Trust, named after the long-time owners of the formerly Manchester-based newspaper. The Scott Trust has 'no other purpose really but to own the company and perpetuate the *Guardian*, you're given no instructions by the owners. You're only told 'to continue in the spirit as heretofore' (Interview 15). Whereas it is important to take ownership into consideration, it is not all-explanatory. Not considering the role of proprietors 'would obviously [be] inadequate but an explanation based solely on it would be just as inadequate' (Bourdieu 1998:39).

3.1.1.4. The influence of the audience

Media need to attract an audience in the increasingly competitive market, and must thus cater to the needs of that audience. On one hand, the pressures of the mass market often mean that the media tilt 'towards representing the interests of the more powerful economic classes,' as such readers attract most revenues from advertisers, and increase the profits, the *raison d'etre* of media as business (Steenveld 2002:68-69). On the other hand, successful media communication requires some idea, a mental map, of their audience, and often the media organisations adapt their style of communication to suit that audience. Also, the media have moved from the situation where 'audiences were seen as a group to inform and educate about political and social affairs, to one in which increasingly the audience is seen as a commodity to

[7] The *Sun,* under the same ownership, changed its political allegiances once again in 1997, when the proprietor Rupert Murdoch decided to support the Labour Party instead of the Conservatives.

create and as a group to entertain' (McCullagh 2002:85). This entertainment is achieved by dumbing down the news content, by 'downgrading of hard news and upgrading of sex, scandal and infotainment' (Kalb 1997; cited in Esser 1999:292).

3.1.1.5. The effect of organisational routines on media output

Finally, 'news organisations develop particular strategies to deal with the environment in which they operate, and these working arrangements have implications for the nature of what they produce' (McCullagh 2002:86). The latter are supposed to cater for the following three requirements of the news-gathering process: 1) to produce reliable and accurate news; 2) to generate information that will attract and retain the attention of a (presumably national) audience; and 3) to select stories that can be processed economically, efficiently and routinely. The routines involved in media production involve the usual 24-hour news cycle or 7-day news cycle in case of Sunday papers.

There is double 'bidding for space' going on in newspaper offices – both bidding between different stories to catch attention, and bidding between journalists. There are more stories at any given time, as well as more journalists and correspondents at any given paper. Consequently, the editors have to pick and mix - not all journalists and their articles will always make it. One of my interviewees explained:

> The *Guardian* has 375 journalists. A lot of them are feature writers ... there are also an awful lot of reporters and they all want into the next day's paper. The balance will depend on the personalities of who's in charge of the paper on a given day. You also need the balance between the international and domestic, between serious stories and light stories, between stories that will tell you about famine or war and you have to balance that with stories that are offbeat or about fashion or film. (Interview 10)

A number of news values will increase the chances of any given story making it into the paper: 'Timeliness, exceptional quality, future impacts, prominence of persons, conflict, consequence, etc' constitute 'the mantra of news values' (Steenveld 2002). Responding to the following news values help a potential story to 'make it' to the paper:

- *Drama*, i.e. if the potential story is either *dramatic* or can be presented in a dramatic way.

- *Unambiguity*, i.e. if the meaning of an event is clear and easily understood by the widest possible readership. The widest possible readership (which, as Brookes (1999:256) claimed, is nevertheless limited to 'the nation') is achieved by writing an easily and widely understood story. A Scottish feature editor told that

  > the first thing I'm looking for, ... that it's a good read and by a good read I mean it's something that is easy to follow, the points are very succinctly made. (Interview 18)

- *'Bad news'*, as negative events are usually more compatible with news values (drama, unambiguity, etc.) than positive events.
- *Celebrity involvement,* i.e. in contemporary celebrity-centred and -saturated culture, 'the actions of elites and of elite nations are believed by news workers to be of more consequence and so are more likely to be covered as news' (McCullagh 2002:89).
- *Cultural and geographic proximity* also increase the chances of the story appearing. 'Those events which happen in places near to us in a geographic sense, or which happen in places or to people with whom we have some form of cultural identification, are more likely to become news' (McCullagh 2002:89). For example, British papers report proportionally a lot more on the Commonwealth and the US, and considerably less from places that are not seen as culturally, politically or geographically relevant. This is relevant also within the devolved United Kingdom, as one of my interviewees stated:

  > Because obviously there's limited, well readers in England aren't gonna be terribly interested in what's going on in Scottish parliament cos it's not relevant to them. So the Scottish edition is quite distinct from the English edition. (Interview 14)

Readers in England will not be 'terribly interested' in the Scottish news, as Scotland is perceived geographically and politically distant from England. Devolution has further increased that perceived distance. It has made Scotland almost a foreign country for the readers in England:

> In a sense it's what Scotland wanted. It wanted to be a separate country. That makes it a little bit more like a foreign country, if you understand what I'm saying, and foreign countries tend not to be as heavily covered for domestic readerships as parts of your own country, therefore it's diminished. (Interview 15)

Note how the interviewee, a senior editor of a purportedly British *national* newspaper unconsciously (?) omits Scotland from that 'national' frame. This suggests that although the London newspapers claim to speak for the whole of British nation, in day-to-day level they imagine their readership in considerably more restricted and sub-British terms. Although Scotland is part of the 'British nation', the 'British nation' as imagined by London-based 'national' newspapers is more limited in scope.

- *Personalised*, i.e. news stories about people that readers can relate to, are more likely to be published.
- 'In order to communicate quickly and efficiently about events and issues, news workers must place them in a *context* that makes them comprehensible and meaningful to the audience' (McCullagh 2002:89). This media practice can be linked again to the 'dumbing down' and 'tabloidisation' and the scares that 'the media offering as a whole converges to the lowest common denominator' (Schoenbach 2001:364).

The tendency to make a story relevant to its readers by localising it in a particular place is common here. In Scottish papers, this often means 'putting the kilt on', i.e. emphasising the Scottishness of a given story. This is often seen as parochial by journalists working in the London media though:

> well, not ... on London papers you don't [localise], no, because you take the view that you're beyond that journalistic learning stage where you don't have to bother with that anymore but there is a sense, occasionally, of perhaps for my paper, I'll be asked to write a story in such a way for the Scottish edition and in that sense Scottish journalism is ... suffers from the same thing. Actually the adjective 'Scottish' gets thrown in to make it seem more relevant. Quite whether readers need that or not, I'm not so sure. (Interview 17)

It is interesting to note here, that sometimes this 'tartanising' happens in British papers as opposed to Scottish papers, i.e. there is also 'parochialism of the centre'. For example, when Michael Martin MP was elected as the Speaker of the House of Commons in October 2000, the *Daily Mail* (bought in England) wrote:

> The election of ***Scot*** Michael 'Mick' Martin as Speaker worries *MPs. His* ex-sheet metal worker's accent is thicker than a bowl of ***Glasgow*** porridge. 'We're going to suggest the use of subtitles above the Speaker's chair,' says a Westminster source, 'because its so hard to follow what he *actually* says.' (Ephraim Hardcastle, *Daily Mail*, 24.10.2000)

The Scottish edition of the same paper omitted all 'tartanisation', but instead localises the story through othering the MPs 'south of the Border', using a deictic 'they':

> The election of Michael 'Mick' Martin as Speaker worries MPs *south of the Border. They think* the ex-sheet metal worker's accent is thicker than a bowl of porridge. 'We're going to suggest the use of subtitles above the Speaker's Chair,' says a Westminster source, 'because it's so hard to follow what he says.' (Ephraim Hardcastle, *Scottish Daily Mail*, 24.10.2000)

This contradicts the notion that localising is something that London papers do not do, and only happens in 'regional' papers.[8]

- *Visuality*, i.e. an event that generates good visual images has a better chance of being reported in the media than one that does not. Moving TV images, photographs, cartoons, illustrations, maps, and other visual images can be hugely important. Research has shown that articles presented together with visuals lead to a greater opinion change (Brinkman 1968), and therefore it is in the interest of the newspaper to publish stories that lead to effective visualisations in addition to the written text.

3.1.2. Mass media content

The main question here is what media do with the 'reality'. What happens to the 'out there' by the time it is printed in the newspaper? This is a difficult question to answer, and there is no consensus on the matter among media scholars. Four main formulations of 'the media's role in talking to us about our world' (Macdonald 2003:12) have been suggested. They comprise: the reflection model, the representation model, the framing model and the simulation model.

3.1.2.1. Reflection model

The so-called 'liberal view' sees 'the media as independent 'mirrors' of society, simply 'reflecting' all that takes place' (Steenveld 2002:63). This undistorted 'window to the world' understanding of the media is usually put forward by journalists and media generally. Media professionals would like us to believe that the journalistic window they provide is clear and does not 'distort or refract what we are looking at; it must allow us to see the world as the world really is' (McCullagh 2002:15). This claim has been refuted by media sociologists. It is technically impossible for the media to provide such an objective window to the world. The

[8] For further analysis of the given extract see Rosie *et al.* (2004:451).

media have a limited news carrying capacity and therefore some element of selectivity is inevitable. By no means are the media purely passive reflectors of the world (Schlesinger 1991a:108; Riggins 1997; Macdonald 2003:12).

3.1.2.2. Representation model

Whereas journalists wish to be seen as reflecting reality, media sociologists argue that media can only represent a partial selection of reality. The 'representing reality' notion of the media is to be understood in terms of media's need to be selective about the world 'out there'. Scholars use a number of metaphors here – media as 'selective filters' (Macdonald 2003:12) or 'fractured glass' (McCullagh 2002:15), for example. Instead of providing the audience with a transparent window on the world, the media 'tell us about some events and issues, but not about others, and the ones they bring to our attention may not necessarily be the most socially or politically significant'. Therefore, the media are able to control and shape the knowledge and understanding that their readership develop about the world.

This notion of the media as selectively representing reality is also criticised, among other reasons, for 'suggesting that the world of external reality and the world of textual representation were separate or at least separable entities, and that the real world always existed in material form prior to its representation' (Macdonald 2003:13). It is also quite a challenge for journalists thoroughly to 'rid themselves of their own subjectivity, and give a fair and balanced representation of different sides of the story while using the right facts to put issues in context' (Hazel 2001:94). Thus the media are not value-free, but act discursively by providing frames.

3.1.2.3. Framing model

Discourses are the 'artefacts of language through which the very reality they purport to reflect is constructed' (Riggins 1997:2). The media have almost an exclusive role in producing those public discourses to the public, and play an important role in 'creating reality' (van Dijk 1993:243; Schlesinger 1991a:108). Discursive construction of reality is advanced by those who believe the media do not just represent the world, but 'help to construct our ideas about the real world' (Macdonald 2003:14). The imperative word here is 'construct'. In nationalism studies, the notion

of imagining does not imply that 'nationalism masquerades under false pretences that [Gellner] assimilates 'invention' to 'fabrication' and 'falsify', rather than 'imagining' and 'creation'' (Anderson 1991:6). Similarly, the

> notion of construction implies neither an intention to deceive, nor an ability on the part of the media to determine our thinking. Instead, it suggests a vital interaction between the media's role in forming the 'frames for understanding' we construct in our heads about the material world, and the actuality of our behaviour and attitudes. (Macdonald 2003:14)

The concept of *framing* is important in understanding the nature of media power and has been widely used in recent literature. Basically,

> The media do not simply provide us with information on certain issues and events: they also provide us with perspectives on them. These place the events and issues within particular contexts and encourage audiences to understand them in particular ways. In effect, the media do not simply select events to cover; they also offer interpretative frameworks through which these are to be understood. (McCullagh 2002:25).

It is in this sense that media acts discursively and differs from the representation model. This also implies elements of agenda-setting – what the specific article does not say about the reality is just as important, if not more so, than what is said (Schlesinger 1991a:93). 'In many respects, media texts are ideological icebergs, of which only the tip is visible to the reader' (van Dijk 1993:256).

While the representation model stated that 'the media have the power to select the events and issues that are given coverage', the discursive framing model suggests the media 'have the power to be selective about what is covered and also the power to interpret events and issues for us' in a particular way. For example, each frame positions devolution and Scottish identity in a different way and so has different implications for how we understand the nature of, and the solutions to, these key issues of devolution and identity. Although those who adopt this central notion of framing 'share the assumption that media power is the power to frame events and issues in particular ways', they identify the use of frames by the media and in the media differently. As the frames are banal – they 'do not announce or highlight themselves but appear as natural and obvious ways of telling stories and of relating events to us' (McCullagh 2002:26-27), researching them can be difficult. Researchers

analysing media frames have two distinct strategies at their disposal (McCullagh 2002:27-34):

- *Inductive strategy* (from text to frame) involves setting fairly loose criteria for the identification of frames. The frames are then 'applied to particular media texts to draw out the underlying frames that are structuring the text, or are latent in it'.
- *Deductive strategy* (from frame to text) is more commonplace among researchers and involves identifying a list of frames/discursive formations/narratives/story types 'that are available to make sense of events or issues in a society. Media texts are then analysed to see which of these frames are actually or predominantly used in the media account'.

I am using both approaches in my thesis. For example, the section on the role of the Other in identity construction is mainly deductive. I have developed a typology of possible Others in identity construction elsewhere (Petersoo 2000). This research looks at the suitability and relevance of such a model in the context of the discursive construction of Scottishness. In contrast, the analysis of linguistic means of realisation in national identity construction has been largely informed by inductive strategy. Based on the data identified in and extracted from the texts, I have developed certain frames for analysing my data in Chapter 8.

However, although the concept of framing is central to understanding the role and power of the media in society, there are 'a number of unresolved problems with it' (McCullagh 2002:34-36):

- The question of media bias and accuracy of news: 'If framing is an inevitable feature of news, then how can we distinguish between good and bad journalism or between accurate and inaccurate news reporting?' If everything is indeed relative, then how do we judge the media?
- The assumption 'that researcher can identify frames independently of the perceptions and responses of readers' is questionable, as researchers cannot claim that their versions of media stories are 'real' versions. The 'validity of analysis of framing therefore depend not on the inherent meaning of media texts – they have none – but on the resourceful readings of the these texts by researchers'.

Consequently, different researchers usually reach different conclusions about the meaning of particular media texts.

- The final question is related to the possible number of frames that can be identified in a given media text. Some researchers claim that 'media coverage is structured around one particular frame' in any given article. At the same time, Gamson (1989) suggests that 'there might be more than one frame present in news stories,' i.e. 'a range of interpretations can be found in the one story'. McCullagh suggests that 'a text organised around a single frame could be assumed to be a more powerful one than one that contains a number of perspectives on the same event' (2002:36), as the coherence of the text influences the perception and understanding of it.

3.1.2.4. Simulation model

Finally, following semiotics, and especially Jean Baudrillard's concept of the *simulacrum* or simulation, post-modern scholars deny 'the point of positing any link whatsoever between media or cultural texts and reality' (Macdonald 2003:14), as the media is unable 'to provide a coherent view of the world' (McCullagh 2002:47). 'Instead of reality, people are treated to simulations involving the constant recombination of various signs, of elements of the code' (Ritzer 1998:12), and this process of simulation 'assumes *force of reality*' in mass communication. 'Reality itself is abolished, obliterated, in favour of this *neo-reality of the model*, which is given material force by the medium itself' (Baudrillard 1998:126). Echoing the McLuhanesque 'medium is the message' claim, postmodernists deny the usefulness of searching for 'meaningfulness beyond the sign', as 'signs refer us to other signs, until the relation of these to the world beyond diminishes to vanishing point' (Macdonald 2003:15), rendering looking for the truth or reality behind the media representations 'pointless' (McCullagh 2002:48). This would make all media research as an attempt to understand the society in general useless, as analysing the media would only tell us something about the media and nothing beyond that.

Critics of postmodernists, however, deny 'this kind of autonomy to sign systems' and locate sign systems as 'essential constituents in our social and political operation' instead (Macdonald 2003:16). And although postmodernists 'give considerable status

to the role of the media' in their theories, they 'offer few detailed empirical analyses in support of their claims'. McCullagh concludes:

> the arguments of post-modernists sensitise us to issues of media presentation and to the effects that these may have on how events are represented and how they are understood. But in the process it may give too much attention to the formats and technologies of the media and, as a result, neglect the issue of media content. (2002:62-63)

3.1.3. Reception of mass media

If traditionally, the media's meaning is to be found in the media content, then a number of scholars insist that 'text-as-meaning is produced at the moment of reading, not at the moment of writing' (Fiske 1987:305). This approach focuses on the reception of the media. What are the effects of the media for the audiences? McCullagh claims that 'a key aspect of media power is the potential to shape the nature of social consciousness and the nature of public opinion,' and consequently media can also shape social and political action (2002:151). Therefore the media is an illuminating field of analysis for the better understanding of national identity formation and also for the study of Self/Other dialectic. However, this thesis is not looking at the reception of media messages per se. The main reason is that there is still disagreement about the exact nature and extent of media effects and 'the case for media effects is far from proved' (Hazel 2001:94).

The analysis of mass media reception usually boils down to the questions: 'what do media do with the audience?' and 'how do print media influence the readers?'. Social scientists have accounted for the audiences in several ways. They have credited the media with the power to 'influence' or 'persuade' their audience, to 'change attitudes', or even to 'affect behaviour' (Curran and Seaton 1997:270). Broadly speaking, there seem to be two types of myths on media and their audiences: those that 'believe in the audience, and myths that distrust the audience' (Schoenbach 2001:368). Some writers claim the media are all-powerful (and audience is the receptive couch potato), others insist that the power rests with the audience (the armchair intellectuals), with a number of positions between those two extremes. There are several different 'phases' described by different authors, and the following is an attempt to describe them.

3.1.3.1. The hypodermic model

This stimulus-response model was widely popular in early twentieth century. The word 'hypodermic' suggests that media messages go directly into the minds of the audience, like hypodermic needles. The hypodermic model has 'heavily behaviourist overtones, media content serving as a trigger' (Hall 1980b:117), and it sees the audience as an undifferentiated and passive mass vulnerable to the media, which 'had put people and society directly at the mercy of those who controlled them' (Elliott 1974). This couch potato view claims that 'the media are capable of injecting ideas and attitudes into vulnerable audiences and in the process making them its prisoners' (McCullagh 2002:152). The hypodermic view with its simplistic cause-and-effect relationship is also sometimes supported by politicians. Hazel (2001) writes about political journalists in Quebec, constantly accused of perceived bias by politicians dissatisfied with their election results, suggesting that election result were determined by media coverage alone.

Newer research refutes the hypodermic model, as media influence is not so straightforward. McCullagh reiterates Klapper (1960):

> ... 'mass communication ordinarily does not serve as a necessary or sufficient cause of audience effects'. This was because the media do not operate on susceptible audiences. Audiences have prior social connections, prior social attitudes and prior opinions, and it is through these that the material from the media was filtered and against which the validity and relevance of its content was assessed. (2002:153)

The audience is not homogenous, and society is not 'a simple, centrally controlled hierarchy' where media influence is uniform. Instead of simply influencing the 'couch potato' audience, the media have the power of reinforcement, and confirm people in the opinions which they already hold, whose political views 'may become more strongly held because they are reinforced by the media' (Curran and Seaton 1997:271, 274).

Recently the hypodermic model has enjoyed a revival, being used by screen theorists[9]. Their main claim is that 'media texts have the power to create the *manner* in which they will be understood'. Consequently,

[9] The name 'screen theorists' derives from the British film journal, *Screen*, which published many of the leading contributions of the French social and psychoanalytic school of thought.

> ... in studying media messages we need to focus on the communication and not on the audiences. If the meaning of the message is in the text, then the responses of audience members do not require independent study: they can be deduced from the structure and characteristics of the film or television programme. [...] If this argument is accepted, then the audience ceases to be of interest or concern to students of the media. The analysis of the media becomes confined to the study of programmes and to the examination of their inherent meaning. Studying the audience, in effect, becomes redundant.
> (McCullagh 2002:156-157)

Although I would not go as far as reinforcing the simplistic hypodermic model or its recent offspring screen theory, I agree that the *intended* content of the media is of more interest, that the text is dominant in the study of the media.

3.1.3.2. Uses and gratifications model

Glasgow Media Group's well-known active audience model falls into this category. Uses and gratifications theories were advanced in 1940s, and they focus on 'what people do with (and think about) mass media' (Spitulnik 1993:299). These theorists turn the question 'what media do to the audience' around and suggest that it is more productive to ask what do audiences do with the media instead. The studies have showed that the reasons why the audience use the media and the consequent gratification 'is varied and not homogeneous' (Curran and Seaton 1997:273). The same media message can be interpreted and used in different ways, to satisfy the particular social and emotional needs that different individuals in the wider media audience have. Four main needs have been identified (McQuail *et al.* 1972):

- *Diversion* helps audience to escape from daily routine.
- *'Para-social interaction'* - some television programmes provide substitute companionship to the audience.
- *Identity confirmation* - people use the media to reflect on/confirm certain aspects of their life and/or sense of identity.
- *Surveillance and information acquisition* - people turn to the media to find out what is going on in the world.

McCullagh notes that 'the implication here is that the relationship between the overt content of a programme and the response that it elicits from the audience is a complex one'. Indeed, the audience response 'to particular programmes is not one that is in the

control of programme makers, but it is a function of the needs of audience members' (2002:155). This is the same in the print media – both 'makers and users, writers and readers, senders and receivers can do things with communication that are unintended, unplanned for, indeed, unwished for' (Newcomb 1991:74). We cannot really know how the readers will understand and interpret newspaper content. This is another reason why this research does not concentrate on the effects and reception of the media at this point.

The uses and gratifications model is also criticised for a number of reasons. Firstly, the audience's use of television and other media 'seems to depend on availability and viewing habit rather than on need' (McCullagh 2002:155). Secondly, the uses and gratifications model is too mentalistic, individualistic, empiricist, static-abstract, it has low explanatory power, and is 'a peculiarly individualistic variant of functionalism', equating goals and needs (Elliott 1974:286-287).

3.1.3.3. The agenda setting model

Agenda setting stands for the 'effect of the media in determining priorities: how far press, radio, and television coverage could change a sense of which events were more important' (Curran and Seaton 1997:275). The agenda setting power of the media is often illustrated by the case of Enoch Powell's 1968 speech on immigration. The speech was delivered to only a small audience in a church hall in Birmingham. Media quickly picked up the controversial speech, and excessive media coverage guaranteed that within two days 'The Rivers of Blood Speech' was known to 86 per cent of the British population. This brought the question of race and immigration into the centre of public concern:

> Before the speech only 6 per cent of a Gallup Poll sample thought immigration an issue of national importance; afterwards 27 per cent thought it was important, and nearly 70 per cent of the public believed that the government would have to take a 'harder line'. (Curran and Seaton 1997:275)

Thus the media have the power to bring issues to the public attention. And keep them there. Whereas the ability of the media to persuade their readership directly is limited, the media affect what their readers know. Or as McCombs and Shaw (1972:66) have put it: while the media 'may not be successful in telling us what to think', they 'are stunningly successful in telling us what to think about.'

Just for clarification, it is worth mentioning here that although McCombs and Shaw are routinely identified as the founding fathers of agenda-setting research, they are simply building upon several earlier studies in the field. Schoenbach writes somewhat ironically:

> Traditionally, we are told that, once upon a time, there was a 'seminal' study by McCombs and Shaw, published in 1972. They were, the myth says, the first to empirically demonstrate that media make us aware of important issues in society. (2001:372)

However, Schoenbach then points out 'a well-known definition that Bernard Cohen came up with in 1963: the press 'may not be successful much of the time in telling people *what* to think, but is stunningly successful in telling its readers what to think *about*' (Cohen 1963:13). And, eventually, the agenda-setting research dates back even more: 'The evidence available suggests very strongly that people think *about* what they are told ... but at no level do they merely think *what* they are told' (Trenaman and McQuail 1961:178).

3.1.4. Concluding remarks

I have outlined the main theories about the role of media in society, and briefly discussed the importance of mass media production, content and reception. Mass media are the 'meaning-brokers' in modern society, the central arena for producing, reproducing, establishing, maintaining and transforming meanings and representations in contemporary society (Castells 1996; Phillips 1999; Chung 2000; Matheson 2000; Fürsich 2002; McCullagh 2002; Steenveld 2002). The media are an important element that form part of the so-called public sphere (Habermas 2001). They are therefore an illuminating field of study for the better understanding of national identity construction. I acknowledge that media influence is varied, and while they can influence certain readers, the influence is difficult to measure; that the media set the agenda although this is not the only function. For the purposes of my research on the discursive construction of national identities in the media, two aspects of media power are important:

(1) the capacity of the media to pick and mix the stories, i.e. the selectivity/agenda-setting function of the media.

(2) the ability of the media to present those articles in a particular way, to frame the articles and act discursively.

Echoing van Dijk and his discourse-processing theory of social communication, I acknowledge that media influence 'goes beyond that of immediate effects and agenda-setting functions of specific media messages on specific readers' (van Dijk 1993:242). In order to comprehend the way the media frames the issue of identity and devolution, I am analysing media discourse qualitatively. The methodology used in this thesis is explained in more detail in Chapter 5.

3.2. Media and national identity

In his *Nationalism and Social Communication*, Deutsch writes about the incompatibility of concepts in social sciences, and the lack of cross- and inter-disciplinary studies, that inhibits the research in general:

> Good work was done on national languages as a problem in linguistics; on national settlement patterns as a problem in geography; on national governments and international relations as a subject of political science; and on 'monetary nationalism' as a problem in monetary theory. Yet the pieces of the puzzle remained unassembled, and, indeed, very often did not fit together. (Deutsch 1966:16)

Exactly the same puzzle remains unassembled in sociology and media studies. The literature contains a number of complaints about the lack of studies about the relationship between media and national identity (Schlesinger 1991a; MacInnes 1992; Brookes 1999; Law 2001). Schlesinger, for example, claims that writing on nationalism 'is marked by a blindness reciprocal to that of current communication studies: there the nation-state is under-conceptualised, whereas in the nationalism literature the mass media are usually quite untheorised' (1991a:156). Brookes mentions the 'relative paucity of recent research within critical communications and media studies on the extent of the mass media's role in the formation of national identities' (1999:247). But assumptions about existing relationship between the two abound: 'there are certain relations ... between the images of identity offered by political elites or the media and "everyday discourses" about nations and national identity' (de Cillia *et al.* 1999:154); the media are 'intentionally used to promote a national collective' (Luther 2001:29). Schneider insists that 'identity studies should not leave aside public representations of belonging', including the media, as otherwise

such studies 'run the risk of overlooking some of the basic structuring principles of any specific identity formation' (2001:361-362). Yet this is exactly what is done in research. Despite all these studies suggesting a link between the media and national identity construction, we still do not know how discursive identity construction actually works in the media. Theorists often assume *a priori* linkages between media and national identities, and such '"gratuitous assumptions" continue to hold sway' (Law 2001:299). It is necessary to study further the media/identity relationship and attempt to overcome those assumptions.

Despite the fact that many authors emphasise the importance of the media in the construction of national identities, there are no clear-cut and convincing arguments explaining *why* and *how* the media is important. Much of the relevant literature remains vague and ambiguous, although making ambitious assumptions and claims unsupported by consistent theory or empirical demonstrations of these processes. The key questions: Are media just reflective or are media constructive? How exactly are national identities forged, imagined and constructed in the media discourse? – remain to be answered. Despite the many attempts to explain the identity formation process in the media, the mentioned gap still remains under-explored and unfilled.

In order to discuss the relationship between the media and national identities, I propose to look at this relationship from two different angles. Firstly, I will look at the historical role of mass media in forging national communities (McLuhan 1964; Anderson 1991). Secondly, I will look at the role of the media in sustaining and developing national identities and the feeling of nationness, or the relationship between 'established nation-states and mature media institutions' (Brookes 1999:247). A number of authors have discussed the latter (Billig 1995; Wodak *et al.* 1999; Yumul and Özkirimli 2000; Law 2001), and my research hopes, first and foremost, to contribute to that field of knowledge. To paraphrase Deutsch (1966:4), I will look at the role of mass media in nation building and nation preserving, respectively.

3.2.1. Role of mass media in nation building

McLuhan explains how peasants were turned into Frenchmen:

> it was the printed word that, achieving cultural saturation in the eighteenth century, had homogenised the French nation. Frenchmen were the same kind of people from north to south. The typographic principles of uniformity, continuity, and lineality had overlaid the complexities of ancient feudal and oral society. (1964:15)

Consequently, 'Francien, the dialect of Ile de France and to some extent of the Champagne region, came to set the national standards for both literary and colloquial French' (Deutsch 1966:43)[10]. The development of print media was instrumental for the spread of nationalism and forging of national communities as we know them today. The print media became the 'Architect of Nationalism' (McLuhan 1964:185).

There are two major ways in which print media have contributed to the development of national communities through 'the vernacular mobilisation of communities' (Smith 1999:11). The media have aided nation building through contributing to the codification of languages and through simultaneous newspaper consumption.

In terms of codification of languages, resulting in a nation-cum-language equation in many parts of the world today (to the degree that many nation-states 'came to share their names with the languages that were so vital for their political legitimacy' (Holt and Gubbins 2002:1)), the role of print media cannot be underestimated. 'Nationalism was unknown to the Western world until the Renaissance, when Gutenberg made it possible to *see* the mother tongue in uniform dress,' writes McLuhan (1964:233). And the new 'architects of nationalism' of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries used the new technology to their full advantage by promoting new national languages. Often these architects of nationalism had to deal with populations that

[10] Recent historiographical developments suggest that France was linguistically unified only after Napoleon III's compulsory military service, followed a few decades later by mass public education. Thus the media were not the only element in turning the peasants into Frenchmen. (Armstrong 2004:11-12)

EDINBURGH

> often had neither a single vernacular (but, rather, a socially, regionally, and experientially differentiated *continuum of vernaculars*), nor a vernacular that could readily be put to the modern ideologizing and organizing purposes that new protoelites had in mind. (Fishman 1996:155)

Although there were some linguistic considerations involved, the 'establishment of a common idiom distinguished from varieties of dialect was much more the fruit of a political will than truly linguistic considerations' (Battail 2000). It was the will of these very architects of nationalism, who saw the potential of print media, and campaigned for the development and codification of national languages. As McLuhan writes, the 'uniformity and repeatability of the printed page' put considerable pressure 'toward "correct" spelling, syntax, and pronunciation' (1964:190), and the architects of nationalism 'stressed the need to recognize, utilize, standardize, and modernize the vernaculars' (Fishman 1996:157). The print media were central to this codification of national languages and played therefore an important role in modern nationalism.

For example, the current version of Estonian was 'chosen' by the nationalising elite, and their print media out of two major written languages at the time – northern Estonian and southern Estonian dialect. Although both versions were spoken widely among the inhabitants, by the middle of nineteenth century 95 per cent of all regularly printed media was in the northern Estonian dialect. This helped to spread that particular version of the written language to the masses, making it eventually the standard language of Estonia – and, consequently, undermined the other version. Thus the various dialect-speaking peasants were turned into Estonian-speaking nationals in great part by the print media (Lauk 2002). The nationalising elites needed 'to communicate with, organize, and activate recently urbanized but still predominantly illiterate populations' (Fishman 1996:155). 'The new middle-class intelligentsia of nationalism had to invite the masses into history; and the invitation-card had to be written in a language they understood' (Nairn 1981:340). Standardisation and spread of national language was therefore 'an important factor in the creation of nations' (Dhoest 2004:397).

But language, of course, is not a necessary condition for the development of national communities, for it is 'the presence of sufficient communication facilities with enough complementarity' that matters (Deutsch 1966:97). In the Americas – both north and

south – a distinct vernacular language was never even an issue in respective national struggles (Anderson 1991:47). In Scotland, the Scots speak the same language as the English south of the Border. However, language is not unimportant in Scotland. There is a growing tendency to publish in vernacular Scots by Scottish novelists. Reflecting and 'speaking to the Scottish experience,' these novels form a part of the Scottish nationalist discourse (Hearn 2000:78-79). This is not dissimilar to the way press uses vernacular languages to mobilise masses, although the scope and scale differ, as newspapers reach a wider audience.

The other major contribution of the print media to nationalism involves an act of banal nationalism, namely, simultaneous consumption of newspapers. Anderson sees this 'ritual of daily newspaper reading as an example of print-capitalism's role in the historical constitution of nations as imagined communities' (Brookes 1999:248). Even the members of 'the smallest nation will never know most of their fellow-members, meet them, or even hear of them, yet in the minds of each lives the image of their communion' (Anderson 1991:6). It is through the simultaneous consumption of mass media that these people come to see themselves as part of the same imagined national community:

> We know that particular morning and evening editions will overwhelmingly be consumed between this hour and that, only on this day, not that. ... The significance of this mass ceremony ... is paradoxical. It is performed in silent privacy, in the lair of the skull. Yet each communicant is well aware that the ceremony he performs is being replicated simultaneously by thousands (or millions) of others of whose existence he is confident, yet of whose identity he has not the slightest notion. Furthermore, this ceremony is incessantly repeated at daily or half-daily intervals throughout the calendar. What more vivid figure for the secular, historically clocked, imagined community can be envisioned? At the same time, the newspaper reader, observing exact replicas of his own paper being consumed by his subway, barbershop, or residential neighbours, is continually reassured that the imagined world is visibly rooted in everyday life[11]. (Anderson 1991:35-36)

This 'specific assemblage of fellow-readers' (Anderson 1991:62) forms the basis of Anderson's imagined community, and for this the existence and development of print media is crucial. Print media, and especially newspapers, 'play a key role in the way

[11] Note the local focus here. Although Anderson writes about national imagined communities, his examples are often *local:* subway, barbershop, neighbourhoods etc. For somewhat similar criticism of Anderson (when writing about the importance of print media, Anderson often illustrates his claims with examples of oral culture), see Wogan (2001). Anderson himself has later modified some of his ideas introduced in the *Imagined Communities*, admitting that they might have been 'one-sided' (1993:120).

in which the nation is understood in terms of time and space: newspaper reading constitutes the *simultaneous* consumption of the same newspapers by a group of individuals defined within *finite boundaries*'[12] (Brookes 1999:249). Again, as McLuhan noted, print media created nationalism.

But while Anderson's study is valuable in understanding the role of 'simultaneous ritual consumption' of newspapers for the formation of national identities, it says little about the content of newspapers:

> However newspaper content and the ritual of process of reading should not be seen as discrete but rather as inextricably interrelated ... [as] the content of a newspaper does not just reflect the ritual conditions under which it is read, but reinforces and reproduces it. (Brookes 1999:249)

The following section will concentrate exactly on that issue and focus on the way how the content of newspapers contributes to the sustaining of national identities through banal nationalism and by 'flagging the homeland daily' (Billig 1995:93).

3.2.2. Role of mass media in nation preserving

There is a prevalence of *a priori* assumptions that media and identity are linked. The mass media is the 'meaning-broker in modern society' (Matheson 2000:571), the 'central field for producing, reproducing and transforming meanings in contemporary society' (Phillips 1999:221). The media have become the main site for various discursive practices, including the discursive construction of national identities, and 'daily newspapers perform a crucial semiotic role in cementing the national form' (Law 2001:300). For example, Connell insists that 'Scotland's distinctive media patterns form an important constituent of Scottish institutional autonomy that has helped to preserve Scottish difference within Unionist structures of government since 1707' (2003:187-188). But how? Schlesinger has taken a stand with the widely assumed role of mass communication in the construction of cultural identities. He criticises the assumption that there seems to be 'an easy and obvious answer: media *must* be important because they are so prevalent. *Must* they be so? And *how* might

[12] The issue of finite boundaries of the imagined community is an interesting one. In the globalised world the technology has stepped a big step forward from the times of when print media forged nations and Cerulo (1997:397) insists that new communication technologies (NCTs) 'have changed the backdrop against which identity is constructed'.

they be so in different ways in different circumstances?' (1991a:138). Luther has suggested that 'the reflection and promotion of national identities may be not only intrinsic to media forms ... but it may also be intentional.' That is to say that the media are intentionally being used, particularly by elites, as vehicles of national identity affirmation and promotion, in order to 'create social integration' and 'maintain stability within the nation' (Luther 2001:28-29). How does this process work?

Although the exact nature of the relationship between media discourse on identities and the way identities are perceived/experienced by media audiences remains fuzzy, 'there are certain relations ... between the images of identity offered by political elites or the media and "everyday discourses" about nations and national identity' (de Cillia *et al.* 1999:154). Brookes (1999:261) believes the importance of media is in reinforcement: 'In the case of media operating *within an established nation-state* the press can be effective in reinforcing national identity in a context in which its naturalness might otherwise be challenged'. One way newspapers achieve this is by imagining their readers in national terms, as newspaper 'is capable of generating a feeling of collective belonging through the style of its address' (Connell 2003:188). Consequently, 'all the papers, whether tabloid or quality, and whether left- or right-wing, address their readers as members of the nation' (Billig 1995:11). Even when the newspapers do not explicitly refer to the nation, they

> are read within specific contexts. First, if these articles do not themselves make explicit reference to national identity, they appear in the context of newspapers which have a shared cultural agenda which is assumed to be national. [...] National newspapers by definition are nationally distributed, and although there may be differences of age, gender, region, social class and ethnicity even within the readership of individual titles, the *limit* is that of nation. (Brookes 1999:256)

I take issue with the claim that 'national newspapers by definition are nationally distributed' in the following chapter, but here it suffices to note Brookes' reference to Anderson and his definition of the nation as an 'imagined community'. It remains also unclear who assumes the shared cultural agenda to be national and why. And is the relationship between media and identities more complex than the one suggested above, i.e. that the media provide the national frame for imagining? How exactly do the media play 'the most remarkable part in the daily reproduction of nationhood'

(Yumul and Özkirimli 2000:801)? What is the relationship between national political space (the nation) and national communicative space (the media) (Schlesinger 1998:55)? Chapter 8 will discuss how the Scottish media reproduce nationness by 'using a deixis of homeland and nation-making, by flagging banal signs of nationhood, by quoting the nationalist utterances of politicians and others' (Yumul and Özkirimli 2000:801).

3.3. Concluding remarks

As the media are the main transmitters of all sorts of public discourse, they provide a major arena for the study of identity and discourse. Discursive construction of nationalism discourse in general, and national identities in particular, benefit hugely from the analysis of media. Mass media provide the arena to put forward, discuss and debate, promote and dismiss, various definitions of identities and various nationalist claims. While 'different people emphasise different views,' then 'no one agenda should be mistaken for the whole' (Hearn 2000:4). While very important, the media provide just one insight into the discursive construction of national identities in Scotland. The next chapter will introduce the case for the analysis, looking at the national identity and media in Scotland.

4. Identifying Scotland

This chapter gives necessary background information about national identity and the media in Scotland[13]. The first half of the chapter will discuss briefly prevalent historical and contemporary definitions of Scottishness. The chapter will continue by looking at the media in Scotland. It will discuss the complex issue of national media in Britain and will suggest some ways of defining the Scottishness of the Scottish media. I will also discuss the history and relevance of the two Scottish broadsheets that form the basis of my data corpus, the *Herald* and the *Scotsman*.

4.1. National identity in Scotland

How has Scottishness been defined throughout the history? Scotland

> is not simply what we want it to mean. It is a complex theatre of memory in which different ways of 'being Scottish' are interpreted and handed down, constructed and mobilised by social and political forces which seek to naturalise them. (McCrone 2001a:3)

National identities are social constructs and the imagined Scottishness is 'being renewed, interpreted and renegotiated according to changing circumstances and interests' (Smith 1998:155). McCrone continues:

> Knowing who you are has long seemed something which has distinguished the Scots, certainly from their neighbours south of the border. A sense of identity, of distinctiveness, seems at times to have been held against all the odds, and, critics might say, much of the evidence. After all, the distinctive markers of national identity, such as language and religion, have been largely absent, certainly in comparison to other inhabitants of these islands, notably the Irish and the Welsh. The Scots have long spoken a variant of English, and from the middle of the sixteenth century marked themselves out as Protestant, to such an extent that they took to being British without much trouble, and, indeed, considerable success, in the eighteenth century. Assertions of difference might appear to amplify minor differences in a world growing increasingly homogeneous. (2001a:149)

The above quotation shows the complex self-other dialectic that goes into defining national identity. Scots are distinguished from the English, from the Irish and the Welsh, and situated in a British context. Various (non-)markers of identity are invoked (language, religion, the Border). The quotation also highlights the

[13] Some information about key historical dates in Scotland is relevant for the understanding of this thesis. I have included a comprehensive outline of key events in Scottish history, especially the events leading up to, and related to, the devolution referenda, in Appendix 11.4.

occasionally elusive nature of Scottish identity. When I first arrived in Scotland from Estonia, I was puzzled by the fact that language does not form the basis, or even a significant part, of the way nationness is constructed in Scotland. The same can be said about Wales, for that matter, although Welsh language plays a more important role on a symbolic level there (although it has felt to a 'language-nationalist' like me that the Welsh language revival policies are a bit like the acts of 'surgeons who restore to its natural function a limb which had been almost paralyzed but not severed from the national body' (Kahn 1950:157; cited in Fishman 1996:158)). In Estonia, the definition of national identity is easy – the one who speaks Estonian is Estonian (consequently, the Estonians who fled to Canada and elsewhere during the Second World War are 'more Estonian' than the Russians who moved to Estonia during the Soviet occupation and speak Russian as their first language). Finland is another similar Herderian example – Wuorinen claimed in 1931 that 'without Finnish we are not Finns'[14] (Fishman 1996:160). But as mentioned earlier, a distinctive language is a helpful, but by no means necessary and/or sufficient for defining national identity (Deutsch 1966:97; Anderson 1991:47). In Scotland, language did not become a crucial 'cultural identifier,' demonstrating that it 'is not necessary for nations to be linguistically distinct' (McCrone 2001a:50). The 'practical disappearance of Gaelic was primarily to the imposition of English' (Guibernau 2004:136) and just one per cent of Scots still spoke Gaelic according to the 2001 census. But this lack of distinct vernacular has not stopped Scottish nationalism and identity flourishing.

Religion, at the same time, has played symbolically a bigger role in the discursive construction of Scottishness. Although many Scots were Protestants like their English southern neighbours, most were Presbyterian rather than Anglican, at times a crucial distinction[15]. Through references to its separate religion, educational and legal system from England, the distinctiveness of Scotland has been constantly re-enacted and emphasised in public discourse, including the media. Language and religion are by no means the only markers of difference though. Other aspects of difference have been asserted and emphasised in Scotland. Depending on the 'goals and demands of the moment,' different elements of Scottish identity are emphasised. At any given time,

[14] John Henry Wuorinen (1931) *Nationalism in Modern Finland.* New York: Columbia University Press.
[15] See Armstrong (2004) on the nationalism-religion connection.

'competing issues of 'national' identity ... are on offer' (McCrone 2001a:151). How have these changed? Jonathan Hearn suggests that

> Scottish national identity hangs in a constellation of overlapping and interpenetrating identities – British, Celtic, European, Western, working class, to name just a few – which can be variously combined and emphasised according to the goals and demands of the moment. (2000:11)

Hence, depending on their utility, different Others are evoked, as Chapter 2 suggests. Chapter 7 will discuss various Others relevant to the discursive construction of Scottishness as they appear in the Scottish media.

4.2. Media in Scotland[16]

As noted in Chapter 3, there is a distinct lack of studies investigating the relationship between the media and identity. Studies of Scotland are guilty of the same charge, as Schlesinger *et al.* write:

> Scotland's media are a crucial element of the country's civil society. They have long been part of the range of institutions constituting the substratum of Scottish distinctiveness within the UK, but seemingly this is so obvious a fact that it has warranted hardly any serious investigation.
> In the mainstream sociology and political science of Scotland, the analysis of media has been a marginal to say the least. For instance, David McCrone's definitive sociology of Scotland contains one passing mention of the topic (McCrone 1992:167), and it is not addressed at all in other important works such as Lindsay Paterson's (1994) study of Scottish autonomy. Even where the question of civil society has been directly considered, as in Jonathan Hearn's (2000:88-9) analysis of the contemporary nationalist movement, mass media are of tangential interest. (2001:10-11)

They continue:

> In its extraordinary disregard for the key role that we would argue the media play in constituting a public sphere, the political sociology of Scotland is of a piece with mainstream theorising on nationalism in general (see Schlesinger 2000). It is as if Scottish media are either so omnipresent as to be invisible, or that their role and impact are simply taken for granted or, again, that they are only worth examining when an exceptional political movement comes along. (Schlesinger *et al.* 2001:11)

Schlesinger *et al.* are not alone in their concern. The paucity of studies in the Scottish context has been noted by other authors (MacInnes 1992; Connell 2003), and in recent years several attempts have been made to try to overcome that shortcoming. Connell

[16] This thesis focuses on the print media in Scotland. For the analysis of other forms of media in Scotland, see Hearn (2000:79-83). More specifically, MacInnes (1994) has written on the broadcast media in Scotland, as has Schlesinger (1998; 2000; Schlesinger *et al.* 2001), to name just a few.

illustrates how Scottish newspapers 'negotiated the shifting dynamics of competition and nationalism' during the interwar period (Connell 2003:189), and Stovall analyses the newspaper attention to nationalism in Scotland in 1966-1976 (Stovall 1978). If McCrone's first definitive sociology of Scotland only had one passing reference to media, his new edition of the sociology of Scotland suggests that

> along with law, the Church, education and banking, the media can be ranked as a key civil institution in Scotland which reinforces national identity. After all, the press is often referred to as the 'fourth estate', reflecting its role in social politics in modern societies. (McCrone 2001a:44-45)

Other researchers have expanded the number of studies about the relationship between media and (national) identity in Scotland. Law (2001) surveys 'the national dialogics of the press sold daily in Scotland through a critical encounter with Michael Billig's (1995) notion of 'banal nationalism''. Bicket (2001) looks at the media discourse on the new Scottish parliament. There are a number of recent articles dealing with the Scottish press written by the Leverhulme-funded media research group at the University of Edinburgh (Rosie *et al.* 2004; MacInnes *et al.* 2005). The mass media in Scotland are 'quite central to the constitution of contemporary public sphere' and 'the media more generally should be recognised as a key force within civil society' (Schlesinger *et al.* 2001:11). However, McCrone (2001a:181) warns us that although 'it is tempting to conclude that the media has been the prime instrument in manufacturing this new Scottish communicative space,' we must take into consideration that 'while the existence and development of a distinctive media has been important in generating this space, it is not a sufficient condition in and of itself'. So there is a relationship between the media and nationalism and identity in Scotland, but the nature of that relationship remains contested.

Other authors stress the importance of the media in Scotland with regard to the development and preservation of civil society and national identity in Scotland. Maurice Smith insists that Scotland has 'a proud and independently-minded press. Its major newspapers play a key role in shaping public opinion, as well as reflecting it' (Smith 1994:1). Indeed, the Scottish media are often elevated to the same level of importance as the 'holy trinity' institutions of Scots law, distinct education system and the Church of Scotland (Brown *et al.* 1998:3; McCrone 2001a:44-45), highlighting their role in the preservation of Scottish distinctiveness. Scottish media 'are a set of

influential and distinctly Scottish social institutions' (MacInnes 1992:137), and 'one of the best-established ways in which 'Scots' can participate in being Scottish' (Higgins 2004:634). These 'distinctive media patterns form an important constituent of Scottish institutional autonomy that has helped to preserve Scottish difference within Unionist structures of government since 1707' (Connell 2003:187-188). But what constitutes Scottish media? Before this question can be answered, I will discuss the concept of national media.

4.2.1. National media?

In general, 'the predominantly London-based editions, which are widely taken to constitute the British national press, usually purport to speak for the whole of Britain, subsuming the national identities of the "stateless nations"' (Brookes 1999:250). Indeed, the London-based British media is routinely referred to as the 'national media' in literature. For example, Britain has 20 'national' daily and Sunday newspapers, all published in London (Esser 1999:311); the fact that 'national newspapers [are] published in one city,' i.e. London, makes the British press unique in Europe (Tunstall 1996:2). Billig bases his whole *Banal Nationalism* on the study of 'British national newspapers', overlooking titles published outside of London. A major EC Fifth Framework Programme, EURONAT, follows the trend by stating 'because of the report's *national focus, regional papers including Scottish and Welsh papers*, are not included in this analysis' (Ichijo 2002:5, my emphasis). Billig is at least aware that his analysis of British 'national newspapers' is controversial and acknowledges that

> the British press, in common with so many other things described as 'British', is English-based. By calling the Day Survey a national survey, while concentrating on the English editions, some of the conventional, hegemonic semantics of 'British' nationalism have already been adopted. (Billig 1995:111).

Thus in the UK context, the term 'national media' is usually attributed to the media based in London. Historically speaking, Seymour-Ure writes (1996:18-19), a national paper in the United Kingdom would fulfil the following three criteria: they are London-based, have nationwide circulation and reflect the whole country[17]. But as he

[17] Note the use of national deixis 'country' by Seymour-Ure to mean, presumably, the UK.

admits himself, none of these criteria are fixed, leaving the concept of national media suitably vague. Lets look at the three criteria in more detail.

National media are based in London, i.e. in the capital of the United Kingdom.

This is broadly the case. However, the successful 'national' paper, the *Guardian*, was until 1959 based in Manchester. According to this definition, Scottish, Welsh and Northern Irish-based titles are excluded from the 'national media' category.

National media have nationwide circulation.

Brookes was quoted in last chapter claiming that 'national newspapers by definition are nationally distributed' (1999:256). But nationwide circulation is 'also something of a fiction' (Seymour-Ure 1996:18-19), as the papers often have different editions with different content in different areas of 'the nation'. Even 'national' papers know their circulation is less than 'national' (MacInnes *et al.* 2005). As one interviewee stated,

> if you look at the circulation profiles, [newspapers] like the *Times* and the *Independent* are really vestigial in the north of England. They don't exist there very strongly at all. The *Independent* more or less stops at Watford ... The *Guardian*'s very well dug in now in London. It does have a substantial balance of readership across the country... (Interview 15)

Thus 'technically, the British press is not national in the sense that the same editions cover the whole of the United Kingdom. Some papers publish separate, editorially independent editions for Scotland' (Billig 1995:111) - so-called 'tartan' editions, as well as other regional editions.

In addition to regional editions of 'national' titles, there are regional and local newspapers. The Newspaper Society defines regional/local newspapers as following:

> Any publication in written form on newsprint or similar medium, published in the British Isles (excluding the Irish Republic) at regular intervals not exceeding seven days, and available regionally rather than nationally (i.e. not available throughout all or most of the British Isles). (www.newspapersoc.org.uk)

If this curious Newspaper Society definition (the nation(al) means British Isles excluding the Irish Republic, but including Isle of Man and Channel Isles, neither of which are part of the UK) is taken as definitive, then Scottish media would indeed be classified as regional media, because it is available 'regionally' rather than

'nationally'. Although it is possible to buy the *Scotsman* in London, the Scotsman sells less than three per cent of its copies outside Scotland. However, the *Scotsman*'s circulation data is included in the National Newspapers/Quality of the Audit Bureau of Circulation, making it technically a 'British national' newspaper. The *Herald* was listed as a regional, not a national paper in the Audit Bureau of Circulation (ABC) books until July 2004, but has now been 'upgraded' into a 'national paper' as well.

National media reflect the whole country.

According to one interviewee, broadsheets see themselves as British national papers in the sense that they cover from Land's End to John O' Groats (Interview 2). But theory and practice do not always coincide. A *Telegraph* journalist admitted that

> We tend to think ... you're writing for a British newspaper so you are writing, broadly, for a British audience although, at the same time, the vast majority of our readers would be English, a particularly high proportion from the Home Counties. (Interview 17)

A study by Rosie *et al.* (2004:448) also found that 'most of the stories covering events taking place in the UK in fact concerned events in England'. Another interviewee claimed that the London-based *Daily Telegraph* has, since devolution, made quite a successful attempt to make sure that the Scottish Parliament gets covered and a Scottish political commentator has been appointed (Interview 14). Yet, a senior editor of a British national Sunday described openly his paper as 'an English paper [...] in the very fine English tradition of liberal intelligentsia' (Interview 7). A senior journalist in the *Guardian* – allegedly a 'national' broadsheet – admitted that, since devolution, Scotland is seen as almost a foreign country and thus tends not to be 'as heavily covered for *domestic* readerships as parts of *your own country'* (Interview 15, my emphasis) – basically saying that 'national' means 'English', not 'British'. Hence, in reality, the 'nationals' tend 'to reflect the life and interests of three or four regions rather than those of the whole country' (The Royal Commission on the Press, 1947, cited in Seymour-Ure 1996:19), and many 'national' journalists admit that their papers are 'English,' and not really 'British'.

The 'nationals' rarely reflect the whole of the United Kingdom, nor are they evenly distributed across it. Hence the category 'British national press' is of limited analytical or theoretical use (MacInnes *et al.* 2005). It follows that 'national media' in

the United Kingdom in general, and in Scotland in particular, are more complicated than commonplace sociological studies of media suggest. This complexity, again, is related to the issue of nationness in the United Kingdom. As 'references to the nation have been consistently ambiguous throughout the 20th century – as to whether it is a reference to Scotland or Britain – the relation between the media and the nation in Scotland has remained peculiarly contested' (Connell 2003:188-189). This makes a study of Scottish media more worthwhile and interesting. An analysis of this media/nation contest in Scotland may potentially offer 'a revealing perspective on the relation between the media and the nation more generally' (ibid.). As so-called 'national' titles themselves do not readily fit the existing definitions of 'national newspaper', and as Scotland itself is more and more seen as a nation, as opposed to a region, even by outsiders, the Scottish media should be thought of first and foremost as national, and not simply as a regional appendix to the London-based British media. Indeed, for most Scots, the 'national media' are located not in London, but 'in Scotland, within a UK framework of ownership control, finance and regulation'; and the Scottish media is defined as national, because it expresses 'a sense of nationhood, as opposed to a mere regionality' (Meech and Kilborn 1992:247). Throughout this research, therefore, I will use the concepts of British national media and Scottish national media, or, for short, British media and Scottish media. By distinguishing between the Scottish and the British press in such a way, this research does not 'forgetfully assume British press homogeneity' (Law 2001). I believe that distinguishing between 'Scottish' and 'British' press is less inaccurate and insensitive than distinguishing between 'national' and 'regional' media.

4.2.2. Defining Scottish media

Arriving at a definition for the Scottish media has proved elusive and difficult for commentators throughout the twentieth century (Connell 2003:190). In this section I will attempt the unattainable – to get to such a definition.

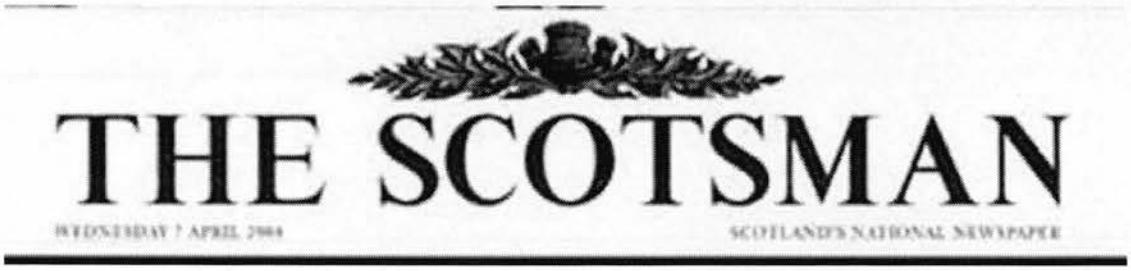
In the stateless nation of Scotland, the media have become 'an alternative means of expressing that sense of [Scottish] distinctiveness. Just as Scotland feels it deserved a "national" identity, it wishes to see its press as "national" in the same terms,' writes Maurice Smith (1994:1-2). Consequently, some Scottish papers describe themselves

as national and flag their 'national' status in their mastheads. There is a thistle logo on the masthead of the 1979 *Scotsman*, thistle, of course, being the 'national flower' of Scotland:



The *Scotsman* adopted a new look in early 1990s, and the masthead was changed as well. Albert Morris writes that

> The three thistles, symbols of a proud and independent nation and newspaper, were still there - in colour, but just as prickly. The new, elegant, and visually-impactive typeface was generally approved by readers, although one claimed that the masthead showed the English thistle.
> The Scotsman treated the matter with humorous indulgence and refused to be nettled. (Morris 2002)



The *Scotsman* announces that it is 'Scotland's National Newspaper'. This self-description as 'national' dates back to the second half of the nineteenth century (Macdonald 1978:12), but it is flagged on the front page only since 1990s.

During the 1979 devolution referendum, the *Glasgow Herald* stated that it is 'Scotland's Newspaper', but it does not use any visual Scottish icons on its masthead:



The *Herald* adopted a more 'national' approach by dropping 'Glasgow' from its title in 1992. During the 1997 devolution referendum, the *Herald* had already introduced the logo to the masthead, and 'Scotland's Newspaper' had been replaced with 'Scotland's Independent Newspaper':



There are still no explicit non-verbal Scottish icons or symbols on its current masthead, but the newspaper now claims to be Scotland's 'national newspaper' as well:



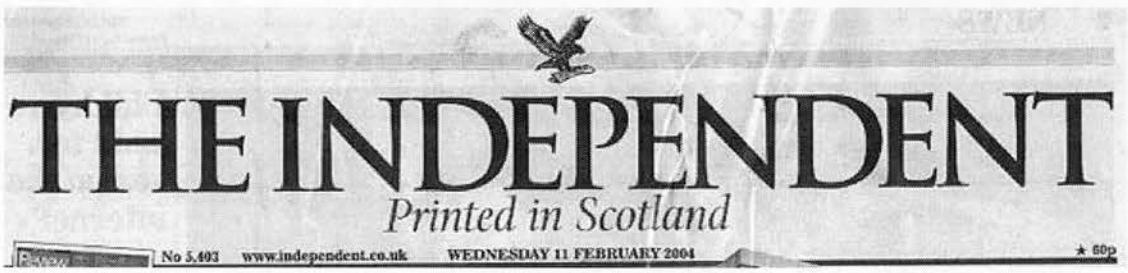
But what makes a newspaper Scottish? Which of the three dimensions of the mass media outlined in Chapter 3 defines the Scottishness of the newspaper? Is it production, content, and reception, i.e. does a newspaper need to be produced and printed in Scotland, have Scottish content, or be targeted at the Scots and distributed in Scotland? The following section will look at some aspects of the media that could be used to define the Scottishness of Scottish media, using the familiar format of production-content-reception from earlier.

4.2.2.1. Scottish production?

There are several aspects in the production side that can be taken into consideration. Hutchison writes about 'home-produced' newspapers (1978c), using a national deixis 'home' to designate 'Scotland'. He suggests that for a newspaper to be thought of as Scottish, it has to be **produced and printed** in Scotland. Consider the following extract from *The Daily Record*'s 1979 devolution campaign:

> More than half of Scotland's voters read the Daily Record. [...] The Scottish edition of the Daily Express (printed in Manchester) has the impertinence to claim that it is 'The voice of Scotland' in its hysterical campaign against devolution.
> **The Daily Record with twice as many readers makes no such claim. Even a political moron should know that there is a division of opinion in Scotland about the merits of an Assembly.**
> It is a piece of political humbug for the English Express group to say that 'No to Devolution' is the Voice of Scotland. (DREC080279, original emphasis)

By emphasising that the Scottish edition of *Daily Express* is actually printed in Manchester and that it is owned by the 'English Express group', the Glasgow-based *Daily Record* is stressing the non-Scottishness of its rival tabloid. This double-othering, based on non-Scottish ownership and location, while emphasising the Scottishness of the *Daily Record*, diminishes the 'right' of the *Daily Express* to act as the Voice of Scotland. However, Hutchison categorises the Beaverbook titles, including the *Daily Express*, as Scottish titles in his own research, 'since there is a substantial editorial presence in Glasgow although the papers are printed in Manchester' (Hutchison 1978a:78). His work supports the idea that the actual place of printing does not matter, and that it is the editorial independence and presence that matters.


THE INDEPENDENT
Printed in Scotland
No 5,403 www.independent.co.uk WEDNESDAY 11 FEBRUARY 2004 ★ 60p

More recently, the *Independent* flirted briefly with the Scots by putting a large blue 'Printed in Scotland' sign under the masthead of its new tabloid-size paper in February 2004, but has since dropped the practice.

Ferguson (1946) suggested decades ago that a true Scottish newspaper has to be **owned by Scots.** He distinguished between three different types of media available in Scotland:

- Those 'owned and staffed by Scots'
- Those 'native journals which have been bought by Kemsley Newspapers'
- London dailies

According to Ferguson, only the first type qualifies as Scottish, as the newspapers in the second type have lost their editorial independence, which has 'rendered them Scottish only in outward appearance' (cited in Connell 2003:191). Ferguson's assertion from that post-war era needs to be qualified in the current age of multinational corporations. Today, a higher proportion of Scotland's newspapers are owned 'from outside her territory by English, or internationally based organisations' (Macdonald 1978:11). This trend is widespread in Scotland in general and the issue has been part of Scottish political discourse since 1970s:

> In Scotland's case, since World War II there has been a trend toward economic dependence on inward investment and external ownership, making for a kind of branch-plant economy. Well over half of Scottish industry is owned outside of Scotland, controlled either by British conglomerates from London, or firms in other countries, especially the US. (Hearn 2000:6)

The media are no different. While in the first half of the twentieth century both broadsheets were Scots-owned, today they are both owned by non-Scottish companies:

	Before	1979	1997	Today
The Scotsman	Thomson Regional Newspapers (1953)		Scotsman Publications Ltd (1995)	
The Herald	Scottish and Universal Investments Ltd (Sir Hugh Fraser)	Lonrho gains control of George Outram& Scottish &Universal Newspapers	1992 buy-out from Lonrho, Scottish Media Group (smg since 2000)	Bought by The Newsquest Media Group in 2002 (belongs to Gannett)

Indeed, if the geographical location of ownership were the defining criteria for the Scottishness of a given newspaper, then both the *Herald* and the *Scotsman* would have difficulties describing themselves as Scottish, as the ownership of both broadsheets has 'emigrated'. Since 1995 the *Scotsman* has been owned by The Scotsman Publications Ltd, which belongs to The Barclay Brothers, now also the owners of the Telegraph group. The 'reclusive' twins Sir David and Sir Frederick Barclay have lived on the tax-haven island of Brecqhou in the Channel Islands, and their only claim to Scottishness (apart from the location of their business ventures) is having Scottish parents, although the brothers themselves were born in London. Similarily, in 2002 smg (known as Scottish Media Group until 2000) sold the *Herald* to London-based Newsquest Media Group, part of a US newspaper giant Gannett. Indeed, despite their 'foreign' owners, neither the *Herald* nor the *Scotsman* would

describe themselves as anything else but Scottish newspapers. Similarly, the *Times,* the *Sunday Times,* the *News of the World* and the *Sun* are still very much Fleet Street/British papers, though owned by the US-based Australian media magnate Rupert Murdoch.

But does the 'nationality' of the ownership matter? Macdonald suggests that

> The advantage of the *Glasgow Herald*'s ownership (until the recent intervention of Lonrho) by Sir Hugh Fraser's Scottish and Universal Investments Ltd. over the *Scotsman*'s ownership by the London-based Thomson British Holdings Ltd. would appear doubtful. (1978:11)

She insists that 'the *nature* of commercial control, rather than its geographical base, would seem to be the most crucial determinant of what a newspaper can or cannot do' (ibid.). Macdonald does express her concerns with ownership control though:

> The current control of the paper by the Thomson organisation does not inhibit the *Scotsman*'s journalists from incisive comment but it does inhibit the freedom to choose which areas of public concern to be incisive about. The Thomson organisation's interest in North Sea oil is not going to encourage the *Scotsman* or the Aberdeen *Press and Journal* (another of Thomson's Scottish papers) to be very critical of the activities of the big oil companies. (1978:10)

But this is related to the issue of proprietors' interest more generally, and does not depend on the geographical location of the owners. According to Maurice Smith, Scottish ownership does not automatically translate into being 'more Scottish' anyway:

> The one major Scottish-based publisher, D.C. Thomson, is conservative, secretive to the point of eccentricity, and plays no part in the banging of the Scottish drum. During the 1980s, our major newspapers' owners included Robert Maxwell and Roland 'Tiny' Rowland, neither of them men with any special interest in Scottish affairs, or even in the fortunes of their Scottish titles, whose only real task was to return annual profits' dividends to head office. (1994:5-6).

Thus simple ownership does not necessarily show anything. As mentioned in Chapter 3, not considering the role of proprietors would be inadequate, but so would be an explanation that is based solely on the role of the owners (Bourdieu 1998:39). While media could historically be described as an architect of nationalism, then today the media are to a large degree multinational – and increasingly nationless, at least in terms of ownership.

Another criteria one can consider is the **national identity of journalists** themselves. Journalists belong among the professionals who play a significant role in the promotion and maintenance of national identity:

> All comparative studies of nationality have underlined the crucial place of such professional strata in generating the identity shifts behind nationalism: it is teachers, clerics, lawyers, journalists and loose screws who cause the trouble, far more than landlords, bankers, manufacturers or trade unionists. (Nairn 1997:188)

McLuhan (1964) famously claimed the print media to be the architect of nationalism. But how do journalists 'build' national identity and promote nationalism? As suggested in Chapter 3, the media have an important role in nation-building process. Quebecois political journalists, for example, have long acted as intellectual leaders in Quebec, where the media played an important part in 'promulgating new ideas, and providing a platform for the 'new intellectuals'' who later became the leaders in Quebec society (Hazel 2001:96). Similarly, the media in Scotland 'contribute to the Scottish sense of difference within the UK, in short to Scottish national identity' (Schlesinger *et al.* 2001:11). But what is the role of individual journalists in this wider process of nation-building and nation-preserving? Does the Scottishness of Scottish journalists contribute to the Scottishness of the Scottish media?

One might wish to describe a paper produced by staff who imagined themselves to possess a particular national identity, or who subscribed to particular 'nationalist' view of the world as national – and this may shape what these journalist define as news and how the news is presented. And as Ferguson (1946) mentioned, Scottish papers are those which are 'owned and staffed by Scots'. While some interviewees hint that national identity of the journalists may affect the post-football or rugby match mood in the office, most of them doubt the importance of national identity in terms of the structure of the newspaper. It may help initially:

> I think it helps on the doorstep if you are Scottish to get people to talk ... especially if you are in a tower block in Govan or something. If you turn up an go 'oohh heeello' (laughter) 'I'm from the Home Counties, could you possibly tell me what's happened' you might have a bit of trouble and you would have a much better chance if you have a Scottish accent. But, I would hasten to say that I think as soon as you are pleasant and nice to people hopefully they don't care where you come from. Initial first interaction, it might help if you have a Scottish accent. (Interview 4)

However, other interviewees are dismissive about the role of the national identity, and stressed the value of 'good journalism', i.e. 'you're judged by what you do' (Interview 7). Here are few more quotations on the 'good journalism' theme:

> I don't think there's any advantage in being kind of intrinsically Scottish. Or in being somebody who was born here. [...] I tend to go with the argument that, you know, good journalism counts [...] whether you've got a Scottish accent or not, but, obviously, good journalism involves a thorough background knowledge of the issues, and of the place you're in. So, that's important, and good journalism is helped in Scotland if you know the situation, and obviously that comes from (...) being here for any length of time. (Interview 3)

> I don't think their nationality is important at all. ... I mean if it's coming here to work on a Scottish newspaper or the Scottish edition of a national, a London-based newspaper, I think it's important that they come here and they know about the area that they're working on and I think that it's important that they get to grips with whatever sort of specific area, if they're covering politics, they know a bit ... or even if they're not covering politics, if they're living and working in a Scottish newspaper and working on Scottish content in Scotland, I think it's great if they have a grasp of the sort of political culture of the country but where they're from or what their nationality is is of no importance. (Interview 8)

But not all interviewees agreed. For example, one England-born journalist in Scotland insists: 'I think it's important ... for those who are not Scottish. I think there is an element of hostility' (Interview 9). But interestingly enough, the hostility is not nationalist as such, and parochialism comes to play again, as the interviewee continued:

> I don't think it's principally based on the fact that one's English. I think it's principally based on the fact that one is taught to work in a rather more ambitious journalistic culture. [...] Now some people would say it was because I was English - I don't think it had anything to do with my national identity. I think it had to do with the fact that I had worked on a bigger stage and most of them hadn't and they found that rather threatening in a sense. ... They resented that and that is a problem throughout Scottish broadsheet journalism and broadcasting industry. [...] Because it shakes up their quiet and relaxed lifestyle up here (laughter). (Interview 9)

In some countries, defining the 'nationality' of the media is easier. For instance, early Flemish public service broadcasters announced that 'Flemish television means: direct visual contact with the whole world, through a medium that is operated by Flemish people and that is governed by Flemish values' (Dhoest 2004), a definition that gives

high prominence to the national identity of the staff and Flemish language. In Scotland, the language is not the defining criteria, and in terms of the national identification of journalists working in Scottish national broadsheets, the situation is much more complex. Overall, national identity of the journalists is not be the basis for defining the 'nationness' of a newspaper in Scotland.

4.2.2.2. Scottish reception?

Scottish newspapers have traditionally been city-based. There is no equivalent of Fleet Street in Scotland,

> no centralised area of power on which competition concentrates. The added dimension of local identity is therefore imposed, in Scotland, on the structural dimension between popular and quality papers. Although three of the daily papers published in Scotland (the *Glasgow Herald,* the *Scotsman* and the *Daily Record*), and the two Sundays (the *Sunday Mail* and the *Sunday Post*) aim for distribution throughout the country, the circulation of all but the *Sunday Post* is very heavily geographically weighted. (Macdonald 1978:12)

The *Herald* is, historically, Glasgow-centred, and the *Scotsman* Edinburgh-centred. The main offices of both titles are still based in respective cities, but more or less recently they have both redefined themselves as Scottish *national* broadsheets. And although the 'petty bickering' between the two Scottish broadsheets in defence of 'their respective home cities has diminished', the expression of 'locational differences is not yet extinct' (Macdonald 1978:12). Even today, the readership of the papers is still very much city-based. For example, in 2002 a remarkable 81% of all copies of the *Herald* circulated in Scotland were sold in Strathclyde, as opposed to just 8% for the *Scotsman.* The readership of Sunday papers is geographically more varied. *Scotland on Sunday* fares slightly better in Strathclyde, managing to sell 32% of its Scottish circulation in the traditional *Herald* hinterland, and *Sunday Herald* sells 26% of its copies outside the Strathclyde region (Competition Commission 2003: Appendix 5.1). Thus, despite the 'national' claims of the *Herald* and the *Scotsman*, the papers are still very much centred in their respective home cities.

This regional focus is not characteristic of broadsheets alone, of course. Macdonald claims that 'theoretically national popular papers,' the *Daily Record* and the *Sunday Mail* also

> angle their content in the direction of what they assume to be the interests and concerns of the working people of the West of Scotland, as befits their geographical location in Glasgow. Distribution concentrates, accordingly, not on extensive penetration of all parts of the country, but on the industrial belt of the South of Scotland, where attitudes and outlook are taken to be compatible with those of the industrialised West. Although there have been deliberate attempts on the part of most of these papers to prevent regional identity directing content, the question of whether they can be regarded as fully-fledged national papers remains. (Macdonald 1978:12-13)

Scottish papers sell outside Scotland as well. The 'extensive sales in part of England' of the *Sunday Post,* for example, 'challenge the view that its appeal is intrinsically Scottish'. Although some of its readership can be explained in terms of exile Scottish readership, its appeal must lie in something other than its Scottishness (Macdonald 1978:18). Similarly, the *Scotsman* sold, in February 2004, 2.51 per cent of its copies in England, Wales, Northern Ireland and other countries, and also 1 copy in Republic of Ireland[18].

But in general, if the location of the readership were to be the only defining criteria for 'national newspaper,' then 'the nature of newspaper readership patterns in Scotland provides little encouragement for those who would like to think of charges of parochialism against the Scots as obsolete' (Macdonald 1978:13).

4.2.2.3. Scottish content?

Existence of Scottish news content is another defining criteria for the Scottish newspapers, as 'the genuine difference in news-content indicates a perspective that deliberately encompasses a Scottish oriented world-view' (Connell 2003:192). The development of Scottish content did not take place smoothly, as Macdonald writes:

> It might be expected that the distinguishing characteristic of Scottish newspapers would be their communication of Scottish news. Historically, such an assumption would be decisively ill-founded, but even in the contemporary situation it is, arguably, open to critical scrutiny. The Scottishness of the Scottish press was very slow to emerge. Although the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries witnessed the florescence of Scottish newspapers, these saw their role as purveyors of British and foreign intelligence primarily, and as reporters of their own environs only gradually. This is understandable, given that newspapers of the time originated most often as supporters of a political

[18] Audit Bureau of Circulation (5 April 2004)

> party, and the centre of political life was accepted unequivocally, at that period, to be London. Technological limitations made plagiarism from the London press inevitable and therefore unashamed. (1978:13)

Note how Macdonald suggests that Scottishness of the Scottish papers is somehow incompatible with covering British and world news, as if being Scottish equals being interested in only Scottish issues, and an international perspective makes these papers somehow 'non-national'. This is in marked contrast with the ideas expressed by several presenters at the 'Scotland & The Media: A Question of Trust' conference organised by the Royal Society of Edinburgh in March 2004. For example, Paul McKinney, head of News and Current Affairs of Scottish TV claimed that the Scottish media today are too parochial, too focused on Scottish news. In order to be a truly 'national' media, Scottish media should edit their own international and British news in addition to Scottish news, and give a Scottish perspective to the former two. Placing too much emphasis on Scottish stories can backlash and lead to claims of parochialism. The latter is an accusation

> that can be laid at the door of many newspaper offices in Scotland. Concern with things Scottish, even in the limited and often trivialised way in which it appears, becomes a means of avoiding consideration of broader political, economic or social issues which must nevertheless affect the lives of people living in Scotland. Foreign news coverage in most Scottish newspapers is shamefully lacking. (Macdonald 1978:18)

In 2000, Tim Luckhurst, briefly editor at the *Scotsman*, accused the Scottish papers of being principally composed of 'local rather than national events (either Scottish or British), and what news coverage they provide is dominated by human interest or breaking news' (quoted in Connell 2003:187), i.e. 'the categories which we now more readily think of as the staple ingredients of popular journalism' like crime, accidents, fires, climate, etc. (Macdonald 1978:15). Another Glasgow-based journalist remembered returning from London, and 'reading a Scottish Sunday paper, thinking, God, this is really insular, very small minded, very parochial' (Interview 13).

The papers seem to believe that in order to assert their Scottishness, they have to choose Scottish stories over non-Scottish stories, whether the stories merit it or not. This is also a regularly occurring theme in interviews:

> The *Scotsman* and the *Herald* are almost schizophrenic. They feel an obligation to report the UK news but they also report local news and they have

> to decide what to put on the front page. Should it be local? Should it be national news, national meaning Scottish? Should it be UK or should it be international? Whereas the *Guardian* only has to worry about should it put an international story on the front or should it be a UK story, the *Scotsman* and the *Herald* are always torn between putting a Scottish story or a UK story. Post-devolution has become easier for them, there's more a tendency now to splash on a Scottish story than they would have before the Scottish Parliament came into being. (Interview 10)

Interestingly, the same interviewee admits that this concentration on Scottish issues is not necessarily a criticism: 'Maybe that's no bad thing that Scotland has its own agenda that's different from the UK agenda' (Interview 10), but he does describe the media in Scotland as parochial. Being parochial equates to being regional, and this is not flattering: 'by and large ... most of the stories up here are irrelevant, seen as parochial and regional. Effectively, I think, we are regarded as something of a region' and not a nation by London-based newspapers (Interview 13).

There was a drive in the 1970s to become more 'national' in the 'British national papers' sense. The *Scotsman* tried to cover foreign news with as much detail as Scottish news, appointing a full-time European correspondent in Brussels – being the first non-Fleet Street paper in Britain to do so (Macdonald 1978:18). Arnold Kemp took over the editorship of the *Herald* in 1981, determined to 'develop the *Herald* as a "pluralist" national newspaper for Scotland, with a strong international outlook' (Smith 1994:241). This international outlook has diminished somewhat during the last decade or so again. A critical Scot-in-London interviewee said:

> Before The *Scotsman* used to argue it was national in a British sense and ... one of the few differences between the *Scotsman* and the London based papers was it was based in Edinburgh rather than London. But it regarded its coverage of international and UK news as being as good as the London based papers and the *Herald* too, thought of itself as national in that sense, in the UK sense. Since, I think, partly as a reaction to Thatcher, change took place in the mid-80s. I'm not sure exactly when you can say it started. Maybe when Jim Sillars won in Govan and I think it was in '87 or '88, and there was a sort of resurgence in Scottish nationalism and then there was the devolution campaign. ... when people talked about the papers having a 'national identity', instead of meaning 'British', they started to mean 'Scottish' and now it's overwhelmingly national in the Scottish sense rather than British and they don't attempt now to regard themselves as sort of competing with the London based papers. They see themselves as writing primarily for a Scottish audience and the quota of Scottish stories is much higher now than it would have been 20 years ago. (Interview 10)

Whether this is a sign of parochialism or assertion of newspapers' Scottishness is a matter of interpretation. However, while it may be good marketing sense 'to give space to Scottish politics as it has been for a long time to provide concentrated coverage of Scottish sports' (Macdonald 1978:17), there seems to be an increasing awareness that Scottish media should look beyond Scotland as well, if they want to be truly 'national' and not just 'regional' Scottish newspapers. Scottish newspapers have flirted with the upsurge of Scottish nationalism and establishment of Scottish Parliament for long enough, and need now to move on - or return to - giving the Scottish perspective on Scottish, British, European and global news.

4.2.3. Scottish national broadsheets

The current research is based on the analysis of the two major Scottish broadsheets, the *Herald* and the *Scotsman*. Although there are two more broadsheets in Scotland that have similar circulation patterns like the *Herald* and the *Scotsman*, namely the *Courier* in Dundee and *Press and Journal* in Aberdeen, the last two 'are not regarded as "national" papers in the same way' (Schlesinger *et al.* 2001:22), nor do they purport to be national papers as *Herald* and *Scotsman* do. According to Schlesinger 'jointly, these newspapers dominate the opinion-leading market in, respectively, West and East-Central Scotland, the belt where most of the population is concentrated' (1998:62). Both papers have been supportive of devolution, though to slightly different degrees:

Title	1970s	1979	1997	Today
The Scotsman	Pro	Strongly pro	Pro	Critical
The Herald	Critical	Pro	Strongly pro	Pro

The ***Herald*** traces its history back to 1783, when the *Glasgow Advertiser* was launched, two years before the *London Times* began in London. Consequently the *Herald* often claims to be 'one of the world's oldest-established dailies' (Smith 1994:234). In 1804 the newspaper was renamed the *Glasgow Herald,* and changed again in 1992, when 'Glasgow' was dropped from the title to reflect a wider Scottish readership. Traditionally, the *Herald* was a Unionist newspaper, and spent most of the twentieth century as 'the strident, unforgivingly Tory voice of the West of Scotland's business class' (Smith 1994:234). The paper remained 'the staunch loyal voice of Conservatism' in the area until the mid-1970s. According to the former editor Arnold

Kemp, the *Herald* 'leader writers used to consult Tory central office to make sure they had the right line' before his arrival in the paper in 1981 (Smith 1994:68). However, the *Herald* started to 'drift away' from 'toeing the Conservative party line during the devolution years of the late 1970s' (ibid.), and by the time of the first devolution referendum in 1979, the *Herald* was in favour of devolution. Arnold Kemp arrived as the editor in 1981, and this finally 'broke the traditional line of mutual support between newspaper and party, defying Conservatism and scorning Thatcherism, in particular, as it espoused Scottish constitutional change with an unmatched confidence' (Smith 1994:235).

The first issue of the ***Scotsman*** was printed in 1817, 'as a liberal antidote to the conservatism of Edinburgh press' at the time (Macdonald 1978:9). Originally it was published weekly, but soon came out also on Wednesdays. By 1873, the daily circulation was forty thousand, and the *Scotsman* became, 'in spirit and authority, Scotland's national newspaper' (Morris 2002). The paper campaigned heavily for devolution in 1979. However, the devolution campaign took its toll on the paper, and 'the excitement of the 1970s was to evaporate before the onset of the new decade,' writes Maurice Smith. 'The disillusionment of the 1979 referendum, and the apparent indifference within Thomson Regional Newspapers to the paper's claim to be a "national" title - with the material benefits to its journalists that that claim would imply – led to a haemorrhage of talent' (Smith 1994:233). Though supportive of devolution during the 1997 referendum, today *The Scotsman* has become rather critical of the new Scottish parliament.

4.3. Concluding remarks

What defines the Scottishness of the Scottish media? If it is not the circulation, location, ownership etc., then what defines the nationness of a particular newspaper? What makes the *Herald* and the *Scotsman* Scottish? Connell suggests that 'national status is less about the comprehensive nature of a paper's coverage and more about the *manner* in which its content is presented' (Connell 2003:203, my emphasis). Hence, one should look at 'the extent to which Scottish newspapers are capable of engendering a sense of Scottishness due to a tendency to address their readership as Scottish' (Connell 2003:188), as it is through the style of its address that 'the press are

capable of generating a feeling of collective belonging' (Fowler 1991:46-65; Dahlgren 1992:17; cited in Connell 2003:188).

This brings us to the question of framing, as discussed in Chapter 3. Connell speculates whether 'the preference for locally produced newspapers in Scotland is indicative of Scottish sociological distinctiveness, because Scottish newspaper-readers consume alternative titles they receive a distinctly Scottish perspective on events' (2003:188). Indeed, the back cover of *The Best of The Scotsman,* a compilation of paper's 1994 articles, states that the *Scotsman* newspaper gives '*a distinctive Scottish slant* to the daily news' (Wishart 1994, my emphasis). It seems that the only criteria for the Scottishness of the Scottish newspaper is the framing of its articles, a specific Scottish perspective. As 'Scots mainly consume Scottish newspapers, they are daily addressed as Scots by Scottish agenda and recognise this to be so,' and this 'contributes to a self-awareness of Scottish difference within the UK' (Schlesinger *et al.* 2001:12). The media are tied up in the Self/Other dialectic as well. Maurice Smith rhetorically asked: 'What is the point of proclaiming Scotland's "difference" if her newspapers cannot produce a different view of the world, tailored more directly to Scottish perspective?' (1994:8).

National identity can be based on language, religion, history, geography, common culture, and many other criteria. National claims vary in their nature between national communities. In Estonia, Catalonia, France, Quebec, and elsewhere, the language plays an important role in the discursive construction of national identity. In Scotland it does not, but this does not make Scotland any less of a nation. The roots and routes of any given national identity differ and 'nationalism is not the expression of "objective" differences, but the mobilisation of those which the actors believe to be salient' (McCrone 2001a:50). It is the same with national media. The media can claim their nationness based on ownership, location, staff, content, circulation, consumption patterns or some other suitable criteria. The individual criteria can matter, but do not have to. The *Herald* and the *Scotsman* are Scottish national newspapers, because they routinely claim and identify themselves to be such. This thesis will look at the subtle ways the media are doing this.

5. Methodology

Here is a quote from the *Scotsman*, published three weeks after the 1997 devolution referendum:

> Mr Blair's rhetoric is a curious thing, given that it is his chief political weapon. It relies heavily on the sound-bite and the slogan but it also seems to dare us to find him mawkish, cloying or manipulative. 'Compassion with a hard edge', he said. It sounds very fine, but what does it mean? Thatcherism with a human face? Socialism with a bit of economic efficiency? Or is it just a way of saying - in prime ministerial parlance - hey, look, you sometimes have to be cruel to be kind?
> [...]
> This is the real problem. Mr Blair does not advocate sin. He demands virtue, hard work, decency, partnership, fairness, compassion, efficiency, self-belief - nothing, in other words, that anyone could possibly object to. When you ask what any of this means in practice, however, all that emerges is the sort of language more suited to a management training seminar crossed with a prayer meeting.
> (SCOT011097)

As the extract implies, linguistic choices matter. Lakoff has written that 'Language drives politics and determines the success of political machinations. Language is the initiator and interpreter of power relations. Politics is language' (Lakoff 1990:13). But rhetoric is a powerful weapon not just for politicians, it also benefits the media. How to analyse the media and their language? Chapter 3 suggests that there are three dimensions to the analysis of the mass media – production, content, and reception. This thesis focuses on the content of media texts and analyses the discursive construction of national identity in the Scottish media, and the change in media discourse. Any research project should match research methods to the questions being asked, and as I am more interested in the nature of changes in media language, and not the extent, I approach the media qualitatively, using analysis of discourse. I 'got microscopic', as Billig (1995) suggests. 'It is as if the main research tool in much contemporary research on identification consists of bifocal magnifying glass precluding generalisations and overviews, and favouring minutely detailed accounts of variations and nuances' (Eriksen 2004:50). In addition to detailed analysis of media texts, I also interviewed a number of journalists to get a better understanding of the production and writing processes involved and to contextualise my findings further.

Broadly speaking, analysis of 'the mass mediation of national identity' (Spitulnik 1993:294) can be either quantitative or qualitative, or combine both of these approaches. 'The distinction between quantitative and qualitative approaches to research is of course more complicated than simply a choice between the use of numerical and statistical procedures on the one hand, and the search for patterned relationships on the other' (Barker 2003:316). I adopted a qualitative approach, but this chapter will briefly also look at the quantitative approach, before outlining the methodology used in the research.

5.1. Quantitative text analysis

Content analysis has the distinct advantage of 'being understood and accepted by most people, including journalists' themselves (van Leeuwen and Jewitt 2001a:1). That may be the reason why content analysis has been the chosen kind of evidence of press data and media analysis for decades (Bell 2001:13; ter Wal 2002:444). The term 'content analysis' is some 70 years old, although its intellectual roots go much further back in history, 'to the beginning of man's conscious use of symbols and language' (Krippendorff 1980:9). Of course, 'however ancient these roots might be, their existence, if not persistence, should not distract from the fact that modern pursuits are significantly different in aim and in method' (ibid.). Content analysis as a methodology was more thoroughly developed during the interwar period. This was triggered by two different aims – firstly, researchers wanted to measure the 'accuracy' of the mass media, and secondly, content analysis methods were elaborated and employed during the Second World War in order to detect possible implicit messages from German domestic radio broadcasts (Krippendorff 1980, Rose 2001:54). It has been a popular methodology since.

Content analysis claims to be an 'explicit methodology, through which ... analysis would not be woolly but vigorous, reliable and objective' (Rose 2001:54-55). One of the best-known definitions of content analysis is by Berelson (1952), who defines it as 'a research technique for the objective, systematic, and quantitative description of the manifest content of communication' (cited in Holsti 1969:3). Krippendorff defines content analysis as 'a research technique for making replicable and valid inferences from data to their context' (1980:21), where 'replicable' stands for Berelson's 'objective and systematic'. But definitions of content analysis have tended to change

over time 'with developments of the technique and with application of the tool itself to new problems and types of materials' (Holsti 1969:2). These earlier definitions have been recently attacked on several occasions. Some of the criticisms are:

- Content analysis is restricted to purely quantitative analysis and 'its definition of "reliable" equates reliability with quantitative methods of analysis' (Gunter 2000:55-56).
- It is concerned with *manifest* content only. Consequently, content analysis 'can only grasp some of the building blocks of social representations ... In content analysis, the evaluation of a word, and the different meaning assigned to it in different contexts, cannot be assessed, unless the *contexts* are checked for every occurrence' (ter Wal 2002:446, my emphasis).
- It is purely descriptive instead of yielding data from which one might infer influences of media content on audience perceptions of social reality (Gunter 2000:56). This shortcoming is less problematic in the case of current research, as it is focusing on media content, and not other sites as production and audience reception.

Although traditionally seen as a quantitative technique, some scholars have recently promoted a more qualitative approach to content analysis. According to Berg the issue of whether content analysis is or should be qualitative or quantitative has become 'one of the leading debates among users of content analysis' and Berg himself 'strives for a blend of qualitative and quantitative emphasis' (1995:175). Bell agrees that content analysis is best used when supplemented with 'researcher's own qualitative insight' (1991:214). Thus 'content analysis and qualitative methods are not mutually exclusive' (Rose 2001:55). Holsti himself wrote that the content analyst 'should use qualitative and quantitative methods to supplement each other' and that 'it is by moving back and forth between these approaches that the investigator is most likely to gain insight into the meaning of his data' (1969:11). Indeed, there has been 'a growth in media research using interpretive and hermeneutic styles and methodologies' (Gunter 2000:82), and the term 'qualitative content analysis' has been coined. Hjimans (1996) distinguishes between following qualitative content analysis methodologies: structuralist-semiotic analysis, discourse analysis, rhetorical analysis,

narrative analysis, and interpretative analysis. All five are used as methods for the qualitative analysis of media content.

5.2. Qualitative text analysis

It has been recommended that *analysis of discourse* can make 'more explicit the classical approaches' to content analysis (van Dijk 1983:20), and indeed, analysis of discourse is widely used in social sciences, especially in media research. Analysis of discourse manages to avoid the limitations of content analysis, as well as limitations of some other popular media analysis methodologies, like semiotics and ideological analysis of media representations. For example, analysis of discourse avoids 'the narrowness of semiotic analysis, with its tendency to focus solely on the text'. It also escapes 'the broad generalisations that often characterise ideological analysis of media representations' – namely, where 'ideological analysis begins with a specific issue (such as race, or gender, or sexuality) and works back through the evidence of media texts, an analysis of discourse starts its enquiry with an ear to the texts themselves, and in a spirit of openness to the patterns that may emerge' (Macdonald 2003:2).

Following Macdonald (2003) I use the term 'analysis of discourse' rather than more commonplace 'discourse analysis' throughout my research. She explains the difference as following:

> Although this book proceeds by analysing discourse, its approach diverges from the methodology known as 'discourse analysis.' Developed primarily by linguists and, to a lesser extent, by social psychologists (e.g. Potter and Wetherell 1987), discourse analysis concentrates on verbal texts and on forms of social interaction such as the interview or the talk show. While 'discourse analysis' details the intricacies of communicative practice for their own sake, the methodology that has become known as 'critical discourse analysis' (or CDA) explores what these reveal about power relations. (Macdonald 2003:3)

Similarly, I am not interested in the media text as such for the sake of the linguistic text alone, as discourse analysts would be. Leader articles are one possible site where national identities are discursively constructed and that is where my research interest lies. Fairclough's neat definition of discourse analysis as 'an attempt to show systematic links between texts, discourse practices, and sociocultural practices' (1995:16-17) fits my approach well. I am interested in the discursive construction

(alias the discourse practice) of national identities (sociocultural practice) in the leader articles (text).

There are several approaches to analysis of discourse to choose from. Van Dijk (1999) writes that as 'discourses have many different structures', these can be 'analysed in many different ways depending on general approaches (linguistic, pragmatic, semiotic, rhetorical, interactional etc.) or the kind of genres analysed, such as conversation, news reports, poetry or advertisements'. One of the more widespread approaches is *critical discourse analysis.* Critical discourse analysis (CDA)

> represents an outgrowth of the work of the British and Australian pioneers of Critical Linguistics, particularly Fowler and Kress, in convergence with the approaches of the British discourse analyst Fairclough and Dutch text linguist van Dijk. CDA has produced the majority of research into media discourse during the 1980s and 1990s, and has arguably become the standard framework for studying media texts within European linguistics and discourse studies. (Garrett and Bell 1998:5-6)

Following Bourdieu (1977), 'calling the approach "critical" is a recognition that our social practice in general, and our use of language in particular, are bound up with causes and effects which we may not be at all aware of under normal conditions' (Fairclough 1995:54). The aim of CDA is many-fold - to 'unmask ideologically permeated and often obscured structures of power, political control, and dominance, as well as strategies of inclusion and exclusion in language use' (Wodak *et al.* 1999:8). Hence the 'critical' in CDA signals 'the need for analysts to unpack the ideological underpinnings of discourse that have become so naturalised over time that we begin to treat them as common, acceptable and natural features of discourse' (Teo 2000:12). The central notion in CDA is that of power, especially the 'social power of groups or institutions' (van Dijk 2001). CDA 'goes beyond the description of discourse to an explanation of *how* and *why* particular discourses are produced' (Teo 2000:43). As distinct from the non-critical, more linguistic analysis of discourse, CDA 'centres on authentic everyday communication of institutional, media, political or other locations rather than on sample sentences or sample texts constructed in linguists' minds'. It assumes that discourse is socially relevant, that there is

> a dialectical relationship between particular discursive acts and the situations, institutions and social structures in which they are embedded: the situational, institutional, and social contexts shape and affect discourse, and, in turn, discourses influence social and political reality. (Wodak *et al.* 1999:8)

This dialectic relationship between discourse and society is, thus, a two-way relationship: 'discourse is socially *constitutive* as well as socially shaped: it constitutes situations, objects of knowledge, and the social identities of and relationships between people and groups of people.' Discourse 'is constitutive both in the sense that it helps to sustain and reproduce the social status quo, and in the sense that it contributes to transforming it. Since discourse is so socially influential, it gives rise to important issues of power' (Fairclough and Wodak 1997:258).

The paradigm of CDA is heterogeneous. Different researchers approach discourse analysis differently – each according to their specific research objectives – and there is no unitary theoretical framework. Indeed, there are many types of CDA, which can be 'theoretically and analytically quite different' (van Dijk 2001). The following are some of the suggested schools of CDA within the overarching heterogeneous paradigm (Fairclough and Wodak 1997:262-268; Wodak *et al.* 1999:7):

- *The British variety* of CDA has drawn upon Foucault's theory of discourse and, in its linguistic dimension, is closely associated with the systematic linguistic theory as well as with Halliday's social semiotics/functional framework. Halliday's semiotics examines 'semiotic practices, specific to a culture and community, for the making of various kinds of texts and meanings in various situational contexts and contexts of culturally meaningful activity' (Lemke 2004). The following sub-schools can be distinguished within the British school of CDA:
  - *Critical Linguists* (Fowler, Kress, Hodge)
  - *Social Semiotics* (Hodge, Kress, van Leeuwen). Kress and van Leeuwen are also 'pioneers in analysis of the visual dimensions of printed texts' (Garrett and Bell 1998:14), and some of the visual analysis later in the thesis is based on their ideas.
  - *Sociocultural Change and Change in Discourse* (Fairclough)
- *The cognitive-oriented approach of Dutch Critical Discourse Analysis* or *Socio-cognitive Studies* (van Dijk) uses a triadic model to show how personal and social cognition mediates between social structures and discourse structures. The so-called triadic model has three main components, looking at social functions, cognitive structures, and discursive expression and reproduction, and how these

three elements bridge the gap between macro and micro levels of analysis (Garrett and Bell 1998:7).

- *German Critical Discourse Analysis* (Maaz, Jäger, Link) is influenced by Foucault's concept of discourse. Here one can distinguish between following more narrow types of CDA:
  - *Reading analysis* (Maas)
  - *Duisburg School* (Jäger)
- *The Vienna School of Discourse Analysis* or *Discourse-Historical Method* (Wodak *et al.*) has roots in Bernstein's sociolinguistic approach as well as within the philosophical tradition of Critical Theory. Their book *The Discursive Construction of National Identity* has been extremely useful in the current research.
- *French Discourse Analysis* (Pécheux)

Most discourse analysts do not explain how one knows or shows that media (or any other) discourse is also 'constitutive' as opposed to simply being 'reflective' of the society. They claim that a 'discursive event is shaped by situations, institutions and social structures, but it also shapes them', although they do add that 'discursive practices *may* have major ideological effects: that is, they can help produce and reproduce unequal power relations' between different social classes, men and women, different ethnic/national minorities and majorities 'through the ways in which they represent things and position people' (Fairclough and Wodak 1997:258). They also somewhat ambitiously claim that by using CDA they are able to make more visible 'these opaque aspects of discourse' that remain usually unclear to people unaware of CDA, like 'ideological loading of particular ways of using language and the relations of power which underlie them' (ibid.), for example make the implicit explicit, or the invisible visible. Furthermore discourse, being constitutive, 'entails that every instance of language use makes its own small contribution to reproducing and/or transforming society and culture, including power relations. That is the power of discourse; that is why it is worth struggling over' (Fairclough and Wodak 1997:273). The three aspects of social life that can be discursively constituted are *representations*

of the world; social *relations* between the people; and people's social and personal *identities* (ibid.)[19].

Finally, Fairclough & Wodak list eight principles of CDA theory and method (1997:268-280):

- *CDA addresses social problems*, analysing the 'linguistic and semiotic aspects of social processes and problems.'
- *Power relations are discursive.* CDA emphasises 'the substantively linguistic and discursive nature of social relations of power in contemporary societies. This is partly a matter of how power relations are exercised and negotiated in discourse.'
- *Discourse constitutes society and culture*, and 'we can only make sense of the salience of discourse in contemporary social processes and power relations by recognising that discourse constitutes society and culture, as well as being constituted by them. Their relationship ... is a dialectical one.'
- *Discourse does ideological work*, i.e. 'ideology is not just a matter of representations of social reality, for constructions of identity which are linked to power are ... key ideological processes too.'
- *Discourse is historical*, because 'discourse is not produced without context and cannot be understood without taking the context into consideration.' Indeed, 'discourses are always connected to other discourses which were produced earlier, as well as those which were produced synchronically and subsequently' – an aspect that requires intertextuality and sociocultural knowledge when analysing the discourse.
- *The link between text and society is mediated*, and CDA is 'about making connections between social and cultural structures and processes on the one hand, and properties of text on the other.'
- *Discourse analysis is interpretative and explanatory.* Any 'discourse can be interpreted in very different ways, due to the audience and the amount of context information which is included.'
- *Discourse is a form of social action.* As a socially committed scientific paradigm, CDA is 'a natural tool for those who wish to make their research socially activist' (Garrett and Bell 1998:6).

[19] These three 'broad domains of social life that can be discursively constituted' are further discussed in Fairclough (1992).

Trying to summarise the various discourse analytical approaches is quite complicated. There seems to be a consensus about the aims of the approach – to reveal underlying ideological patterns and make the implicit explicit. But there is no obvious consensus about how that aim is to be achieved methodologically. One reason behind this fuzziness and non-consensus is CDA's inter-disciplinary focus. Doing discourse analysis is a multi-faceted, methodologically multi- and interdisciplinary undertaking (Fairclough 1992:225; Teo 2000:43; Pardo 2001:91). But this does not seem to keep the authors from working with CDA and applying the method in various contexts. Gunter, although not a discourse analyst himself, gives possibly one of the most helpful, although very general, descriptions of the method:

> The procedure in most discourse analyses consists of a layered combination of several techniques. Specific linguistic analyses (e.g. choice of words such as 'riots' instead of 'disorders', or the search for textual patterns) and rhetorical strategies are followed by thematic analyses. This is a general form of content analysis to determine the main topics in a text. In most cases, but not all, it is followed by a macrostructure analysis, in which the interrelationship between topics in a text is represented in diagram form. Thus discourse analysis can be both general and detailed at the same time. The detailed analysis is rhetorical in nature. (Gunter 2000:88)

Triandafyllidou explains how she proceeds with 'qualitative discourse analysis'[20] of media texts, when studying the Italian press discourse on nation and immigration. She used standard database management software (Foxpro2) to conduct 'simple code-and-retrieve operations'. She first carried out a content analysis, using identifying categories for the article and then several coding categories corresponding to the national identity dimensions identified by Smith (1991): ethnicity, culture, territory, language, religion, civic traditions and national character:

> Thus texts were initially coded using a theoretically derived coding scheme. Through reading the articles several times, catchphrases, metaphors, rhetorical devices or short segments of text that illustrated a particular view on some national identity dimension in relation to immigration were identified and typed in as memo (text) variables. The main criterion used in identifying these passages was the extent to which they referred to Us-Italians or Them-foreigners or the relationship between the two. The aim of this type of coding was to collect all the instances in which the newspapers presented the issue of immigration in terms of an Us-and-Them relationship. At a second level, the occurrences of each national identity dimension in the data were counted and

[20] As opposed to 'quantitative discourse analysis'?

> the themes mentioned in relation to each dimension were identified. (Triandafyllidou 1999:66-67)

Apart from those two quite helpful but not at all comprehensive or detailed guidelines for applying discourse analysis empirically, the researcher is left with Fairclough's conclusion that 'there is no procedure for doing discourse analysis; people approach it in different ways according to the specific nature of the project, as well as their own views of discourse' (1992:225). Indeed, given the desired emphasis on the 'mutually informing development of theory and method,' Chouliaraki & Fairclough do not even 'support calls for stabilising a method for CDA' (1999:16-17).

5.2.1. Analysing discursive construction of national identities

To analyse the discursive construction of Scottishness, and the Self/Other dialectics in Scottish newspapers in the context of constitutional change, I am combining elements of critical discourse analysis (especially *discourse-historical method*), grounded theory and elements of content analysis. I have created a corpus of texts for the analysis, the principles involved in compiling the data corpus are explained in Chapter 6. The items of analysis are the leader articles of newspapers, as these represent the condensed 'corporate view' of the editorial teams of these publications and the same underlying views can be assumed to be found in other sections of the newspaper as well. The editorial cartoons are used as illustrations to the textual editorials, as well as being analysed separately later on.

Following Berg (1995) and Gunter (2000), I intended to approach the analysis of the media texts both from the quantitative and qualitative angle. Quantitatively, I planned to code the themes in the leader articles and the characters (political figures, historical heroes), using the so-called *non-frequency technique* of content analysis, described by Holsti (1969:7). According to this technique, the researcher codes whether a theme occurs in an article or not, and will not count on how many occasions the given theme or character was mentioned. This is different from a more common content analytical approach that 'involves establishing categories and then counting the number of instances when those categories are used in a particular item of text (Silverman 1993:59). However, I quickly realised the futility of such approach. The topics of Scottish politics, history, culture, etc. were overarching and present in most of the

articles. Quantification of topics and characters would not contribute to the overall quality of the research and was therefore decided against.

Consequently, my research ended up being mainly qualitative. Van Dijk has researched racism and interethnic relations and media in the Netherlands and elsewhere. He has focused on 'preferred types of topic (such as those of difference, deviation and threat), story development, news structures, argumentative and local semantic moves ... as well as stylistic and rhetorical properties of such discourse' (van Dijk *et al.* 1997:167). van Dijk has done a lot of CDA research relevant to nationalism and identities, and has mainly concentrated on the question of racism and discrimination, i.e. the discursive construction of the discriminated and/or suppressed Other. But the Other can also be positive, as was explained in Chapter 2. Recognising 'differences does not automatically translate as implied 'inferiority'' nor necessarily implies racism (Fitzgerald 1991:198-199). This implied and assumed inferiority of the Other seems to be the basis of all research conducted by van Dijk, making his research approach somewhat less suitable for the study of *positive* Others; neither does he discuss the discursive construction of the national Self. The discursive construction of national Self and Other are intimately related, as they constitute two sides of the same identity 'coin'. Thus an approach is needed that looks at both sides of that coin. *Discourse-Historical Method* attempts 'to integrate systematically all available background information in the analysis and interpretation of the many layers of a written or spoken text' (Fairclough and Wodak 1997:266), and seems more useful in the study of the discursive construction of Scottishness and otherness.

Imagining the national community 'is part of a wider ideological, discursive consciousness', writes Billig (1995:10). Thus it is the discourse of identity formation that needs to be studied. When looking at the discursive construction of national identities, the aim is

> to throw light on the largely contingent and imaginary character of nation and sharpen awareness of dogmatic, essentialist and naturalising conceptions of nation and national identity which ... threaten to make impossible [the] equal pluralistic coexistence of various ethnic groups, language communities, religious communities and forms of life. (Wodak *et al.* 1999:9)

Note how the authors have made a value statement here about two competing views of how nation *should* be understood – whether a nation should be an 'equal pluralistic coexistence of various ethnic groups' or conceptualised as 'dogmatic, essentialist and naturalising'. This is not surprising. Gunter (2000:88) has warned that the 'problem with discourse analysis is that the critical stance of researchers using it may render its forms of analysis biased'. CDA

> sees itself not as dispassionate and objective social science, but as engaged and committed. It is a form of intervention in social practice and social relationships: many analysts are politically active against racism, or as feminists, or within the peace movement and so forth. (Fairclough and Wodak 1997:258)

In the field of national identity construction, 'socially committed' researchers employing CDA hope that 'methodological and epistemological awareness of problematic 'othering' will automatically help to create a fairer representation in the future' (Fürsich 2002:64). CDA 'is not an exception to the normal objectivity of social science' though. Social science is inherently tied into politics, and having political interests 'does not imply that CDA is less scholarly than other research: standards of careful, rigorous and systematic analysis apply with equal force to CDA as to other approaches' (Fairclough and Wodak 1997:259). However, Riggins warns that 'if a reader of a piece of research suspects that he or she is learning more about the analyst than about the content of the text, the analysis obviously has failed' (1997:3).

Although the definition of nations as described in this paragraph by Wodak *et al.* seems to be limited to 'hot' nationalism ('dogmatic, essentialist and naturalising conceptions of nation and national identity'), their approach is nevertheless also applicable to cases of 'banal' nationalism. My research on Scotland is guided by their studies. Wodak and her colleagues emphasise their theoretical understanding of national identity and identity formation, assuming the identities to be social constructs, construed in discursive events. They believe that 'the discursive construction of national identity revolves around the three temporal axes of the past, the present and the future'; that important ordering criteria for that process are 'origin, continuity/tradition, transformation, (essentialist) timelessness and anticipation', as are 'spatial, territorial, and local dimensions'. The methodological approach used by

Wodak *et al.* to analyse Austrian national identity has three closely interwoven dimensions of analysis: the contents/topics, the strategies and the linguistic means and forms of realisation. I use all these three dimensions of analysis recommended by Wodak *et al.* to study the discursive construction of Scottishness.

The first, ***Contents*** dimension of analysis distinguishes five major thematic areas (Wodak *et al.* 1999:30-31):

- The idea of the *homo nationalis* and *homo externus* (category involving emotional attachment to the country, national mentality).
- The narration and confabulation of a common political past (category involving founding and/or origin myths, mythical figures, political successes).
- The linguistic construction of a common culture (includes the topics of language, religion, art, science, technology and everyday culture).
- The linguistic construction of a common political present and future (category involving the topics of citizenship, political achievements and problems, European Union).
- The linguistic construction of a 'national body' (e.g. landscapes).

Not all of these five thematic areas are always present in any unit of analysis – the choice of themes is highly context-driven. For instance, when analysing political commemoration speeches, Wodak *et al.* realised that the construction of a common culture and of a 'national body' almost never occurred, whereas these were present in focus groups and interviews[21]. Also, they did not encounter attempts to construct a *homo nationalis* (or an 'Austrian person'). Political commemoration speeches concentrated 'almost exclusively on the narration of a common political past and on the discursive construction of common political present and future' (Wodak *et al.* 1999:74). I will look mainly at *homo nationalis* and *homo externus*, (alias national Self and Other). However, I also look at the common political present and future, common culture and common political past. Law notes that 'Scottish heroic figures and events provide pronounced sets of national signifiers' (2001:303) – is that evident in the media? All these topics are related to the 'discursive construction of "national"

[21] That can also be explained by the fact that at the focus groups and interviews the moderator / interviewer asked participants questions that lead to discussion about common culture and a 'national body'.

identity which is based on the formation of sameness and difference' (Wodak et al. 1999:31), hence to the construction of the national Self and Other. As already noted, not all of the thematic areas will always be relevant. It is most likely that during the time of major constitutional change, the topics of the common political present and future are deployed to a greater degree in newspaper editorials.

Strategies are the other principal element involved in the discourse-analytical approach. Strategies are 'plans of actions with varying degrees of elaborateness, the realisation of which can range from automatic to conscious, and which are located at different levels of our mental organisation'. There are various macro-strategies – 'the strategies involved in the discursive construction, perpetuation, transformation and dismantling of nations and national identities', which all 'subsume a range of more local strategies which relate to the respective macro-function' (de Cillia *et al.* 1999:160-163; Wodak *et al.* 1999:31-35). Although the different strategies are analytically distinguishable from one another, 'these strategies occur more or less simultaneously and are interwoven in concrete discursive acts' (Wodak *et al.* 1999:33). Strategies are used to different levels in different situations and contexts, and can therefore be adapted and modified to a particular piece of research. Strategies are not *a priori* categories which are imposed on the data, but can be derived from the analysis.

With regard to strategies, I diverge somewhat from Wodak *et al.* First of all, based on Ricento (2003:617), who notes that 'strategies are designed to shape thinking and persuade auditors/readers', I call these 'rhetorical' and not 'discursive macro-strategies'. Also, whereas Wodak *et al.* list four main strategies (construction, perpetuation, transformation and dismantling), Ricento only distinguishes between three main discursive strategies (constructive, transformation and perpetuation) in his analysis of the discursive construction of Americanism (2003:617). Similarly, not all of the above rhetorical strategies were present in my data. Whereas constructive, transformation and perpetuation strategies were relatively common, I could not identify any instances of dismantling or destructive strategies, nor justification sub-strategies. In an Austrian context, the latter was mainly used in relation to Austria's Nazi past (Wodak *et al.* 1999:90). There is no similar 'collective shame' in Scotland.

Whenever the Britishness of Scots is downplayed, this is done through emphasising Scottishness, falling under the transformation, not the dismantling strategy.

I am interested in the strategic choices made by the newspaper editorial teams. Therefore, I will try to assess whether the leader article aims to discursively (Wodak *et al.* 1999:33) do any of the following:

- *Construction strategy* is an 'attempt to construct and to establish a certain national identity by promoting unification, identification and solidarity, as well as differentiation'
- Justify some action in the name of the national identity construction (*perpetuation/justification strategy*). Perpetuation strategies 'attempt to maintain and reproduce a threatened national identity, i.e. to preserve, support and protect it'. Justification strategy, a sub-strategy of perpetuation strategy, is 'employed primarily in relation to problematical actions or events in the past which are important in the narrative creation of national history. They attempt to justify or relativise a societal *status quo ante* by emphasising the legitimacy of past acts of the 'own' national 'we'-group which have been put into question, that is they restore, maintain and defend a common 'national self-perception' which has been 'tainted' in one way or another'.
- *Transformation strategy* is an attempt to 'transform a relatively well-established national identity and its components into another identity the contours of which the speaker has already conceptualised'.
- *Destructive/dismantling strategy* aims 'at dismantling or disparaging parts of an existing national identity construct, but usually cannot provide any new model to replace the old one'.

There are other strategies in action in media texts, which are relevant for the study of the Self/Other dialectic. These are assimilation and dissimilation strategies, which serve the above-mentioned discursive macro-strategies.

- *Strategy of assimilation* emphasises or presupposes sameness. Assimilation strategies can be constructive, destructive, perpetuating or justifying.
- *Strategy of dissimilation* emphasises or presupposes difference. Dissimilation strategies can be constructive, destructive, transformatory or justifying.

Another two strategies, not so dissimilar to each other, can be identified in the media discourse. These are: attributional bias, and universal strategy of polarisation. Luther (2001) describes attributional bias as a rhetorical strategy, which is often used to justify acts by the Self and discredit acts by the Other. She distinguishes between **situational attributions**, i.e. acts due to the surrounding context (external, separate from the mind), and **dispositional attributions**, i.e. acts due to something residing in the actor (internal, psychologically based). As a rule, attributional bias is used as following:

	Positive Actions	Negative Actions
Us	Dispositional	Situational
Them	Situational	Dispositional

Anything positive done by the Self is claimed to come from inside the actor. In contrast, if the Other does something good, it is attributed to the situation and environment, because the Other is inherently not good. Similarly, if the Self does something questionable, this is credited to external factors, whereas the Other acts negatively due to dispositional attributions, i.e. the Other is inherently capable of questionable actions. Luther's attributional bias can be compared with what van Dijk calls a 'universal strategy of polarisation', i.e. a strategy of positive ingroup description and negative outgroup description (1998:33):

	Positive Properties	Negative Properties
Ingroup	Emphasise	Mitigate
Outgroup	Mitigate	Emphasise

Thus, whenever the ingroup ('us') does something positive, the positive properties are highlighted. Negative properties of the ingroup are mitigated or downplayed. In contrast to this, the positive actions of the outgroup ('them') are mitigated and downplayed, whereas negative properties of 'them' are emphasised.

And finally, ***the linguistic means of realisation*** is the third element of Wodak *et al.*'s discourse-historical approach that I'm following. The linguistic means and forms of realisation include the 'lexical units, argumentation schemes and syntactical means which express unity, sameness, difference, singularity, continuity, change, autonomy, heteronomy, etc.' (de Cillia *et al.* 1999:163). Most prominent and important are various references:

- Personal references (anthroponymic generic terms, personal pronouns, quantifiers).
- Spatial references (toponyms/geonyms, adverbs of place, spatial reference through persons, by means of prepositional phrases such as 'with us', 'with them').
- Temporal references (temporal prepositions, adverbs of time, temporal conjunctions, temporal references by means of nouns, semi-prefixes with temporal meaning).

Billig writes that 'the crucial words of banal nationalism are often the smallest: 'we', 'this' and 'here'' (1995:94). I am focusing mainly on the use of personal deixis 'we', as this is most revealing in national identity discourse. In addition, I will be looking at other national deixes, among them 'nation', 'people', 'country', 'history'. The theme of deixis is introduced in much more detail in Chapter 8.

In addition to various personal, spatial and temporal references, one can look at the phenomenon of vagueness in referential or other expressions, euphemisms, linguistic hesitation and disruptions, linguistic slips, allusions, alliterations, rhymes, comparisons, metaphors, hyperboles, rhetorical questions, and the mode of discourse representation (Wodak *et al.* 1999:35; van Dijk 1993:264).

5.3. NVivo Research tool

The exploration of my data is conducted with NVivo research tool. It is one of the software tools developed by QSR. NUD*IST stands for **N**on-Numerical **U**nstructured **D**ata **I**ndexing **S**earching and **T**heorising. NUD*IST Vivo, or NVivo for short is used in this research, as it is more suitable for detailed qualitative analysis than N6, the current more widely used version of NUD*IST[22]. NVivo does not analyse the media texts on the behalf of the researcher, but 'it enables the researcher to keep good

[22] For a further description and comparison of the two software tools, see www.scolari.co.uk/qsr/qsr.htm

records of their hunches, ideas, searches and analyses and gives access to data so they can be examined and analysed' and thus making the qualitative analysis 'easier, more accurate, more reliable and more transparent' (Gibbs 2002:10-11). As a qualitative software tool, which has been designed to conduct fine-detailed, or microscopic analysis, to use Billig's metaphor again, NVivo is especially suitable for the discursive analysis of media texts.

The data corpus (i.e. 110 leader articles) was imported into NVivo, and then usual qualitative data analysis procedures were followed. The texts were repeatedly and thoroughly read for emergent themes (including descriptions of various Others), actors, rhetorical strategies, linguistic means of realisation. In-vivo coding was used to highlight extracts and phrases focusing on certain *topoi*, and finally a node tree was constructed, which enabled code-and-retrieve and in-depth detailed qualitative analysis to be conducted.

5.4. Visual sociology

Kress and van Leeuwen, mentioned earlier in the context of CDA, consider texts from a multimodal perspective and 'argue that with the increase in the use of visual mode with texts, it is essential that scholars now focus on and clarify the interplay between the verbal and the visual' (Garrett and Bell 1998:14-15). As part of my research, I am looking at the role played by Scottish devolution in political cartoons, using visual methodologies to do so. First of all, as Wigston has pointed out, there are no supportive definitive theories to assist in the analysis of political cartoons (2002:74). This is not surprising considering 'the sheer magnitude of the theoretician's task', as Coupe notes: 'a theoretical understanding of political caricature involves an understanding of caricature itself, the caricaturist, his [sic] audience, and the historical epoch and social structure within which the caricaturist operates' (1969:79). In this section I will first briefly introduce the field of visual sociology, and then outline some of the methodologies that can be used to analyse cartoons. Finally, I will discuss the methodology used in the visual aspect of my research.

Analysing visual images in sociology is not always easy: 'Despite the huge amount of academic work currently being published on things visual, there are remarkably few guides to possible methods of interpretation and even fewer explanations of how to do

those methods' (Rose 2001:2). Apart from methodological issues, there is a tendency to view images as illustrations only. There is a 'problem of images', reflected in 'their poor appreciation as valid research material in some parts of some academic disciplines' (Banks 2001:140). Smith wrote only recently that e.g. photographic material is rarely seen as data 'worthy of analysis in their own right, and not merely a handy illustrative resource intended only to vivify the serious business of analysis accomplished by the written text' (Smith 1996). The tendency to view visual data as purely illustrative and thus not worthy of more focused analytical treatment has been attributed to the problems faced in 'connecting up visual sociology as a subfield to the central theoretical traditions and debates of social science' (Emmison and Smith 2000:ix). Surprisingly, this neglect of the visual in sociology takes place in a situation where 'the visual is central to the cultural construction of social life in contemporary Western societies' (Rose 2001:6), where images etch 'themselves into popular memory' and thus 'reproduce discourse long after words have faded' (Macdonald 2003:4).

The field of visual sociology is relatively new, gaining ground in the 1960s (Harper 1998:134). Today, the International Visual Sociology Association is organising successful annual conferences; its official journal *Visual Studies* (formerly *Visual Sociology*) has been published since 1986; there is a lively IVSA mailing list. The field is growing in popularity and respectability. Flick notes that visual data are only now 'increasingly being rediscovered in qualitative research' (1998:161). One of the reasons for studying visual images is that 'most fundamentally, images allow us to make kinds of statements that cannot be made by words; thus images enlarge our consciousness and the possibilities for our sociology' (Flick 1998:147). For example, the graphic imagery of cartoons can even 'convey messages that would be unacceptable if spelled out in words' (Feldman 2000:173). Nevertheless, Emmison & Smith note that visual sociology is still 'perceived as an isolated, self-sufficient and somewhat eccentric specialism'. Despite the belief that 'becoming more reflexive about [visual data], and becoming more methodologically skilled within it, should enhance the quality of our research', many sociological researchers unfortunately 'simply aren't interested in what visual sociologists have to say' (Emmison and Smith 2000:ix-x).

Visual images, including political cartoons, can be used in and by sociology in several ways. There are three main methodological ways of proceeding in visual sociology (Banks 1995; Flick 1998:151): (1) make visual representations, i.e. studying society by producing images; (2) examine pre-existing visual representations, i.e. studying images for information about society; (3) collaborate with social actors in the production of visual representations. I will focus on the second option and will look at visual representations of Scottish devolution, and Scottishness in that context, in the political cartoons in British and Scottish newspapers. In doing this, I am guided by what Gillian Rose calls *critical visual methodology*, i.e. 'an approach that thinks about the visual in terms of the cultural significance, social practices and power relations in which it is embedded' (2001:3).

5.4.1. Visual methodologies

Analysis of the discursive construction of national identities is explained earlier in this chapter. The analysis of discourses does not need to be restricted to the language, but can also encompass non-verbal communication and visual images (Chouliaraki and Fairclough 1999:38). Discourses 'are articulated through all sorts of visual and verbal images and texts, specialised or not, and also through practises that those languages permit' (Rose 2001:136). Images can therefore also be described as a sort of discourse, because 'a specific visuality will make certain things visible in particular ways, and other things unseeable, for example, and subjects will be produced and act within that field of vision' (ibid. :137). Thus analysis of visual discourse can be used 'to explore how images construct specific views of the social world, in which case ... visuality is viewed as the topic of research, and the discourse analyst is interested in how images construct accounts of the social world' (ibid. :140).

The visual aspect of my research is guided by the following questions: how to analyse and understand the visual discourse; and how to proceed if one wants to understand the visual discourse of Scottishness in the media? There are various methodologies available for a visual sociologist, but not all of them are suitable for the type of research I am conducting. I will therefore not discuss the methodologies for dealing with moving images, etc. I will focus on the site of the image itself (i.e. the cartoon),

and not on the site of production or the site where the cartoon is seen and interpreted by audiences. Both the production and interpretation of cartoons is interesting and relevant, i.e. I acknowledge the need to 'emphasise the role of editorial selection, journalistic deployment and routine professional practices' and that 'any study of meaning in the media will be handicapped if it ignores audience or reader responses' (Macdonald 2003:22-23). However, analysing these other two sites is beyond the scope of my research and thus not covered here.

5.4.1.1. Quantitative analysis of cartoons

I will look at cartoons both quantitatively and qualitatively. First of all, content analysis, which was already discussed earlier in this chapter, is one suitable methodology for analysing political cartoons, and has been deployed in a number of studies (Dines-Levy 1990; Day 2000; Feldman 2000; Maleševic' 2000; Wigston 2002). Bell defines content analysis as 'an empirical (observational) and objective procedure for quantifying recorded "audio-visual" (including verbal) representation using reliable, explicitly defined categories ("values" on independent "variables") (2001:13). Just as with textual content analysis, 'visual content analysis is a systematic, observational method used for testing hypotheses about the ways in which the media represent people, events, situations, and so' (Bell 2001:1). Although content analysis does not 'demonstrate how viewers understand or value what they see or hear', it does show 'what is given priority or salience and what is not. It can show which images are connected with which, who is given publicity and how, as well as which agendas are "run" by particular media' (ibid. :26) – taking us back to the notion of agenda-setting introduced in Chapter 3.

Nevertheless, content analysis 'does not analyse individual images or individual "visual texts" as semiotic methods do' (Bell 2001:1), and thus many researchers supplement content analysis with a qualitative interpretation of images. Content analysis 'might be best thought of as a necessary but not sufficient methodology for answering questions about what the media depicts or represents' (ibid. :13). Such analysis on its own is seldom able to support statements about the cultural significance of the particular image and of effects or interpreted meaning. Rose

outlines further shortcomings of content analysis in analysing visual images (2001:66-67). Content analysis:

- Deals with numbers, assuming that if something occurs very often, it is more important than something that occurs less often. However, frequent occurrence does not equal significance.

  Furthermore, 'something that is kept out of the picture may nonetheless be extremely significant to its meaning', suggesting that 'certain representations of what is visible depend on other things being constructed as their invisible opposite; and content analysis is incapable of addressing these invisibilized others'.
- Counts the occurrence of the code. It does not, however, 'discriminate between an aspect of an image that exemplifies a code perfectly, and one that is only a weak example of it.'
- Breaks an image into parts and does not count for any interconnections between these parts. One could look at the statistical correlation between the parts, but that may not the best way to understand how an image works.
- Is unable to articulate the expressive content of an image, and is also unable to evoke the *mood* of an image.
- Claims to be an objective research method, and thus is not reflexive. However, as Rose emphasises throughout her book, reflexivity is at the core of critical visual methodology, and as a researcher, 'it is important to consider how you are looking at a particular image and to write – or perhaps express visually – that into your interpretation' (Rose 2001:28).

Based on these criticisms, one can see that elements of qualitative analysis should be used to expand the depth and breadth of the knowledge gained from the suitable and valuable data corpus for social science research on its own right.

5.4.1.2. Qualitative analysis of cartoons

There is a wide range of qualitative methods that could be employed in analysing political cartoons. These include semiotics, iconography, psychoanalysis, etc. I will briefly explain some of these various visual methodologies below, and then outline the approach used in my research.

One of the suitable methodological approaches is **semiotics**. Semiotics is a study of signs and sign systems and can be a very productive way of thinking about visual meaning of images. Semiotics relies on the distinction between the signifier and the signified of the sign, and assumes every image to have two layers of meaning – 'denotation' (what, or who, is being depicted), and 'connotation' (the ideas and values are expressed through what is represented and through the way in which it is represented) (van Leeuwen 2001b:94). Semiotics requires detailed analysis of images, and 'its reliance on case studies and elaborate analytical terminology create careful and precise accounts of how the meanings of particular images are made' – it 'confronts the question of how images make meanings head on'. Semiotics assumes that 'constructions of social differences are articulated through images themselves' (Rose 2001:69, 72, 96), and it is therefore a particularly useful approach in current study of discursive construction of identity and the Self/Other dialectic. Semiotic analysis includes the following steps (Rose 2001:91-92):

- Decide what the signs are.
- Decide what these signs signify 'in themselves'.
- Think about how the signs relate to other signs both within the image and in other images.
- Explore their connections (and the connections of the connections) to wider systems of meaning, from codes to dominant codes, referent systems or mythologies.
- Return to the signs via their codes to explore the precise articulation of ideology and mythology.

But despite of being conceptually elaborate, 'for all its analytical richness, semiology does not offer a clear method for its application'. Also, semiotics' preference for 'detailed readings of individual images raises questions about the representativeness and replicability of its analyses' (Rose 2001:73, 97). Reiterating Rose, for example, one could ask why I chose the particular cartoons to analyse in Chapter 9, and question whether these cartoons are representative of other cartoons in my data corpus. In addition, one can wonder whether other researchers looking at the same political cartoons would 'read' them in the same way. And finally, although semiotics

is concerned 'with the question of representation ... and the question of the 'hidden meaning' of images' (van Leeuwen 2001b:92), then it does not address the issue of context. Barthian visual semiotics studies 'only the image itself, and treats cultural meanings as a given currency which is shared by everyone who is at all acculturated to contemporary popular culture, and which can then be activated by the style and content of the image' (ibid.). This echoes similar criticism by Macdonald with regard to semiotic analysis of media texts in general (2003:2).

Van Leeuwen suggests that **iconographic analysis** would overcome that concern. Iconography deals with the question of representation and the 'hidden meaning' of images, just like semiotics. But in order to support its interpretations, iconographic analysis 'also pays attention to the context in which the image is produced and circulated, and to how and why cultural meanings and their visual expressions come about historically' (2001b:92). Whereas semiotics distinguishes between the denotation and connotation layers of meaning, iconography distinguishes between three layers of pictorial meaning (ibid. :100-101):

- Representational meaning, which is similar to 'denotation', recognising what is represented on the basis of our practical experience.
- Iconographical symbolism, recognising not only the denotation of a particular person, thing or place, but also the ideas or concepts attached to it (cf. connotation).
- Iconological symbolism, ideological meaning of the image.

Using iconographic approach to study 'the contemporary visual representations of significant issues can bring to light the origins of certain conventions and undo the ideologically convenient effects of what Bourdieu has called 'genesis amnesia'' (van Leeuwen 2001b:102).

I am looking at cartoons at two levels. First of all, I conduct a simple content analysis. I look at the use of a number of images in cartoons – Scottish and British iconography, persons, etc. A semiotic and iconographic reading of the cartoons follows, looking at the representational meaning of cartoons (what is presented), and iconographical symbolism (what ideas and concepts are attached to those images).

5.5. Interviews

A thorough analysis of the mass media should look at all three dimensions of the media - production, content, and reception (Spitulnik 1993; Curran and Seaton 1997; McCullagh 2002). The media content, which is the main focus of current thesis, is 'increasingly the product of complex bureaucracies and large commercial organisations, so it is essential to look at the institutional contexts in which media messages are assembled' (McCullagh 2002:6). I therefore also conducted a number of in-depth interviews, together with Dr Rosie and Dr MacInnes in London, Edinburgh and Glasgow between 2002 and 2004 (see Appendix 11.3). The semi-structured interviews covered a number of areas: biographical background of the journalists, story writing process, publication and editing procedures, national identity of the journalists etc. The interviews were transcribed verbatim and these 'personal and subjective recollections of the production process' (Dhoest 2004:396) have been used throughout the thesis to illustrate and explain findings and arguments, providing useful background information and further understanding of various issues.

6. Data corpus

This chapter consists of two main parts. The first three sections explain the reasons and considerations behind including various newspaper genres in my data corpus. I am looking at three newspaper subgenres: although the main emphasis of this research is on the analysis of leader articles, I will also analyse headlines and political cartoons. The last part of the chapter outlines the choice of time frames and newspapers, and principles of data sampling for the analysis.

6.1. Headlines

Headlines represent 'a special type of communicative medium in which a maximum quantity of information is imparted with a minimum of words'[23]. Newspaper headlines have important textual and cognitive functions (van Dijk 1991:50), but although 'the importance of the role of headlines in the communicative act performed by newspapers can hardly be exaggerated ... the nature of this role has virtually never been explicated in the literature' (Dor 2003:695). Inspired by this vacuum, I will analyse the headlines of all articles in my data corpus as part of my research, but will do that separately from the articles themselves. Looking at the headlines independently from the articles is justified, as 'headline is a unit, separate from the item itself' (Jucker 1996; cited in Kronrod and Engel 2001), and thus forms a separate sub-genre in journalism (Bell 1991). Methodologically, the analysis is similar to the analysis of discourse used for study of leader articles, focusing on linguistic means of realisation, especially the use of national deixes. The analysis is rather informal, and not systematic and explicit. It aims to 'reveal the ideological implications of the headlines, that is, from which socio-political position the news events are defined' (van Dijk 1991:62).

How can headlines be conceptualised? Historically, headlines were not used in British newspapers until after c. 1800 (Schneider 2000), and simple headings were much more common until then. Whereas headlines provide a summary of a kind of the following text, headings 'do not give any specific information about the content of the news stories following. They simply serve the purpose of better grouping the news'

[23] A definition provided by M. Meeks in the summary of an article by A. A. Verbin, 1984, Cambridge Scientific Abstracts database

(Schneider 2000:48). For example, the heading usually includes information about the article's place and date of origin (*report heading*, e.g. London, December 21) or indicates the section of the newspaper (*section heading*, e.g. Home News, Foreign News, etc.). It was only when newspapers became more widespread and popular, expanded in size and scope (the abolition of the Stamp Duty in 1855 allowed newspapers to expand), and truly became a mass medium, that headlines were introduced to facilitate better orientation among all the articles available in any given copy.

Headlines serve several functions in the newspaper. Based on various sources, I propose the following main functions:

- To act as attention grabbers, together with other visual material (photographs, cartoons, illustrations, etc.). Headlines are usually always in more visible font, use different font type (**bold,** *italics*, underline) and font size. They are 'the most conspicuous part of a news report: they are brief, printed 'on top', in large bold type, and often across several columns' (van Dijk 1991:50). Such highlighting of headlines makes them more visible for the reader.
- To summarise the main points of the article, which is seen as one of the main, and most important functions of the headline. 'A reader need only to glance at the headline ... to obtain a fairly accurate idea of what the whole report is about' (Teo 2000:13; cf. van Dijk *et al.* 1997:168), they 'express, in a highly concise form, the crux of the news event' (Teo 2000:13), the topic of the article. It is important to note though that the 'traditional notion of headlines-as-summaries definitely does *not* capture the function of headlines in more popular newspapers, and especially in tabloids' (Dor 2003:697)[24].
- To trigger interest and persuade the reader to read the following text. As the headline is the first thing the reader notices, together with visuals, 'it is supposed not only to inform the reader, but also to persuade him/her to read the whole item' (Nir 1993; cited in Kronrod and Engel 2001). This is sometimes achieved through omitting words and articles, which arouses 'curiosity in order to draw the reader's

[24] The difference in the aim and form of leader articles in broadsheets and tabloids is considerable, which is one of the reasons why the current research only focuses on the quality end of the newspaper market. Tabloids and broadsheets are difficult to analyse comparatively, despite Esser's tabloidisation of news claims (1999). Seymour-Ure (1998b:43) has elaborated on the differences between leader articles in the broadsheets and tabloids.

attention to the texts underneath' (Kronrod and Engel 2001:686), stimulating readers to learn more about missing details. Grammatical incorrectness of the headlines is mainly due to omitted articles or auxiliary verbs[25]. In addition to leading to vagueness and ambiguity, this 'may also have a special ideological function, for instance when the responsibility for an action must be concealed' (van Dijk 1991:50).

- An important cognitive function of the headline is to orient the reader to process the text in a pre-determined direction, i.e. to guide the reader to adopt a particular conceptual model for understanding the following article. Headlines 'are important not simply because they highlight key points in the main body of each article, but also because they suggest to the reader a conceptual model within which the news event in question is to be located' (Hargreaves 1996:608). Thus the headlines frame the article, 'provide us with perspectives' on these articles, and offer interpretative frameworks through which the articles are to be understood (McCullagh 2002:25). The information given in the headline 'signals the reader how to 'define' the situation or event' and 'the information expressed in the headline is strategically used by the reader during the process of understanding in order to construct the overall meaning, or the main topics, of the rest of the text before the text itself is even read' (van Dijk 1991:50-51).
- Finally, the headlines play an important role in everyday routines of news production. Journalists themselves 'use summarising headlines to understand and memorise the information they get from the discourses of their many sources, which may well define the situation for *them* as they in turn do it for the reader' (van Dijk 1991:51). It is often the (copy) editor, who comes up with a suitable headline, and not the journalists themselves.

Given that headlines are powerful attention-grabbers serving important functions in the newspaper, it is reasonable to assume that they are carefully constructed, and are 'not arbitrary parts or labels of news reports' (van Dijk 1991:69). Teo writes:

> In a genre of discourse where space is a premium, news headlines have to be crafted in such a way as to employ the minimum number of words to package maximum information. Thus, every word in a headline is carefully chosen and structured so as to maximise the effect of the headline. (2000:14)

[25] Auxiliary verbs are used in front of another verb to alter its meaning, and include the following: *be, can, could, do, have, let, may, might, must, ought, shall, should, will, would.*

Consequently the headline 'usually contains concise information which has a very high newsworthy value according to the editor' (Kronrod and Engel 2001:685), as 'the right material should be chosen for the headline' (Dor 2003:705). The lexical and topic choices made in the headline can have important ideological implications. For example,

> journalists may 'upgrade' a less important topic by expressing it in the headline, thereby 'downgrading' the importance of the main topic. In other words, headlines are a subjective definition of the situation, which influences the interpretation made by the readers. (van Dijk 1991:51)

Looking at the headlines gives us an insight into how the newspaper understands and imagines its readership, as 'the construction of a successful headline requires an understanding of their readers – their state-of-knowledge, their beliefs and expectations and their cognitive styles' (Dor 2003:696). It follows that looking at the headlines helps to understand the ideology of the newspaper (Teo 2000:14).

6.2. Leader articles

The data corpus includes 110 leader articles from two major Scottish broadsheets, the *Herald* and the *Scotsman*, 40 from 1979 and almost twice as much (70) from 1997. I have another 44 leader articles from the same time period from British broadsheets, used in the analysis of headlines. Although I am analysing individual leader articles, I am aware that each article is only one element of the overall discourse and that discursive construction of national identity is constituted by a multitude of texts (Le 2002). However, Billig suggests that the editorial column is one arena where the media 'use the nationalised syntax of hegemony, simultaneously speaking to and for the nation' (1995:114). Hence leader articles lend themselves well to the analysis of discursive construction of national identities.

Leader articles, also known as leading articles, editorial articles, editorials, or simply leaders, usually appear 'on an inside page under a reduced banner of the paper's "masthead"' (Bell 1991:13), like these from the *Glasgow Herald* and the *Scotsman* in 1979:





Leaders are usually set 'in distinctive type or wide columns, or enclosed in a box, or surmounted by an emblem; signals, all of them, that readers should realise that the article is special' (Seymour-Ure 1998b:43). There can be a number of leader articles in each issue – up to three leader articles per editorial column are quite common in British and Scottish newspapers. Leader articles are usually printed in the same page and at the same location. Whereas in the popular tabloid papers the leader article tends to have a fixed place – for instance, the *Sun* generally places its editorial column on page two, in the broadsheet papers the page of the editorial column varies, depending on the size of various newspaper sections. The leader article is almost always on an even-numbered page. In 1979, *Scotsman* leaders were printed on even pages within the range of 6 to 14, *Glasgow Herald* leaders were either on page 4 or 6. On the day of the 1979 devolution referendum, both Scottish broadsheets chose to print their leaders on the front page as real eye-catchers – in addition to their usual column inside the paper – emphasising the perceived importance of the devolution referenda. In 1997 the *Herald* placed its leader articles somewhere between pages 10 to 22, and the *Scotsman* on pages 12 to 20. On the day after the 1997 devolution referendum, the *Scotsman* brought its leader article to the front page once more. As Coats and Mulkey wrote a while ago, this move indicates the perceived prominence of the issue (1950:540).

According to Seymor-Ure (1997; 1998b), leaders are the definitive corporate view, anonymous and 'magisterial'. Traditionally, the whole op-ed page, i.e. the leader article(s) and opinion pieces published on the opposite page, was used by the editor and seen by the readers as 'a showcase for one favoured set of views' (Rosenfeld 2000:6). The leader article generally does not express the personal view of the editor, but is rather a statement of the newspaper's institutional view about a (usually

political) event or issue (Bell 1991:13; van Dijk 1993:265; Le 2002:386)[26]. It is the 'voice of a paper' (Brown 1979:81), or 'what a manager might nowadays wincingly call the paper's mission statement' (Seymour-Ure 1998b:43). This collective anonymity, created by 'nameless editorial writers' (Rosenfeld 2000:8), is also reflected in the way leader articles are written, as described later.

As anonymous corporate view, the opinions expressed in the leader articles can be expected to 'generally feed through into a paper's political coverage' (Seymour-Ure 1997:586). Hence leader articles can be used as proxies for the whole newspaper (Althaus *et al.* 2001). This view is reflected in my interview data, with some qualifications. Those who edit newspapers assume that leaders do influence and 'trickle down' to other articles throughout the paper and consequently provide 'a benchmark for the staff themselves' (Seymour-Ure 1998b:43). Those who write (non-leading) articles do not generally see themselves as constrained by the leader opinion. Thus although rank-and-file journalists tend to say that they do not need to strictly follow the editorial line (as expressed in the leader articles) and the news articles are meant to make sense independent of it, they do admit that the editorial line invariably determines selection of stories and that indirect influence is considerable.

The need to follow (or not) the editorial line differs between various papers. One interviewee noted, for instance, that

> on a paper like the *Mail,* you broadly knew what the paper thought about certain issues and you knew the way stories were meant to be written, without having to be told it formally or overtly. You picked it up by osmosis, really. But what was also true on a paper like the *Mail*, journalists are directed to write specific stories in certain ways. A story would come up and it's a very top-down newspaper, as most tabloid papers are ... when producing the news, we'd be told 'we want to do this story and we want to do it in a certain way like this.' (Interview 17)

This is not how interviewees describe the practice in broadsheet newspapers. Broadsheet journalists believe they have a freedom to write stories as they see it. Nevertheless, even in broadsheet papers,

> there are times when the editor of the news desk or some of the other executives ... expresses a strong interest in the story and a strong interest in

[26] And in return, 'reading editorials usually involves the formation of opinions not only about what is said, but also about the writer, or the newspaper' (van Dijk 1998:28).

> seeing it presented that way. If that's a reasonable interpretation, that's the way it will appear. (Interview 17)

Obviously, it is important to note that leader writers and news journalists construct their stories in very different ways, and therefore they assess the influence of the leader articles differently as well. Nevertheless, the anti-devolution stand expressed e.g. in the *Daily Telegraph* (see section 7.1.) headlines and leader articles, as described previously, does influence the overall reporting – or non-reporting - of the news through agenda-setting, framing etc.

6.2.1. The role of leader articles

As a genre, editorials may be classified both as a special type of media discourse, as well as belonging to the large class of opinion discourses. Editorials differ from the news discourse, since in case of the leader articles, 'the news event is already known, and the main function of editorials is to formulate the newspaper's official opinion about this recent event, possibly backed up by some arguments' (van Dijk 1993:265). Van Dijk attributes to editorials a 'prominent function ... in the expression and construction of public opinion', and he claims that 'for those people who read them, they help to make up their mind about the events of the world, even if often by critical opposition against them' (ibid.). Leader articles are 'a means of having a dialogue with your readers. It's a means of taking a stand' (Interview 15). Consequently, 'to convince its readers' is one of the main functions of editorials (Le 2002:386). Newspapers, in general, 'provide individuals with clear ideological spectrum' and then the readers 'want their newspapers to guide their opinion, not simply to reflect it' (Interview 9). The editorial column is expected to formulate opinions about current news events, and to provide factual, evaluative and pragmatic information about news events (e.g. to summarise and evaluate the event and give a conclusion in the form of a recommendation, advice or warning). Analysing editorials helps us 'trace the formulation of opinions and the expression of ideologies' which is important, as these have 'persuasive, political, social, and cultural functions' (van Dijk 1993:266). These functions are especially manifest in 'such important sociocultural and moral domains as ethnic relations and the reproduction of racism' (ibid.), as well as in the field of national identity construction.

6.2.2. Who reads leader articles anyway?

One criticism of the analysis of leader articles is that they are not widely read. Indeed, already in 1925 Beuick wrote that 'political editorials are on the wane in their influence and in their number' in the US and 'the editorial article has ceased to [influence] in the same measure as it did more than twenty-five years ago', i.e. c. 1900. He joked that 'the editorial pages of the great majority of newspapers might very well be filled with comic strips or radio wiring diagrams as far as reader interest is concerned', given 'the majority of readers do not bother to read editorial opinion' (Beuick 1925:161). The picture may not be as bleak as Beuick suggests. The reading of leader articles varies considerably between different types of newspapers (broadsheet *versus* popular press) and different countries. For example, Esser reckons that only 8 per cent of British newspaper readers 'usually read' the editorials. This number increases considerably amongst the readers of broadsheets. For example, one in five of the readers of the *Times* 'usually read' the leader column (Esser 1999:299). And in Germany, where the 'tabloidisation' of newspapers is weaker than in Britain, 45 per cent of all newspaper readers state that they 'usually read' the leader articles – six times more than in Britain (Esser 1999:299). The *Guardian*'s former editor said that 'it's always very difficult to tell quite how important leaders are', but based on reading-and-noting exercise results he estimated that leader articles are read by 'about a third of your readership, which isn't bad because almost nothing is read off the front page by more than about 40-45 per cent and it goes down to about 2 per cent quite easily' (Interview 15). But then again, another interviewee does not think a very high percentage of readers pay attention to leader articles – he certainly gets less feedback on his leader articles than on his columns (Interview 9). However, the reason for different feedback may lie elsewhere than in lower readership. The fact that the leader articles are written anonymously, whereas the columns are personalised, may simply mean that readers find it more difficult to respond to an anonymous corporate body (the newspaper) than to a clearly identifiable writer (the columnist). Also, Seymour-Ure suggests that 'it is common for named columnists to work also as anonymous specialist leader writers, and it will not be surprising if they keep their best performances for their bylined articles' (1998b:46). Readers of a given leader article may have found them less interesting than the bylined comment by the same leader writer, and thus is more likely to write a reader's letter to the comment.

Thus editorials do not necessarily have massive popular influence, as the readers of tabloid newspapers, which count for most of the newspapers sold in Scotland and Britain every day[27], generally do not pay much attention to the leader column. But we can assume that one-fifth to one-third of broadsheet readers do read the leader article(s) regularly.

Furthermore, the influence of leader articles on elites is important. Elites and opinion leaders use leaders and other editorial articles to 'monitor opinion in contexts where their first-hand knowledge is inadequate' (Brown 1979:75). For example, an interviewee from the *Guardian* distinguished between the influence of leaders on politicians and opinion leaders, and 'ordinary' readers:

> There's no definitive answer in this. Some people argue that most members of the public don't read the leaders and that the importance of the leader is exaggerated. Certainly during General Elections, I'm not sure the public will vote according to the editorial line of the paper. But having said that, politicians regard leaders as much more important than members of the public do. Politicians will get upset over leader lines that criticise the policy of their department. It's true of embassies as well. The Israeli Embassy will be cross if we take an editorial line that's too pro-Palestinian. The Foreign Office will be upset if we take a line that's critical of the Foreign Secretary and will engage in argument. So they do have influence but maybe their influence is mainly with the politicians and the policy makers rather than with the general public. I think the general public will only read an editorial if they're specifically interested in that subject. I don't think [that] they would read the entire column every day. (Interview 10)

Even Beuick, who suggested that editors might just as well fill the editorial column with 'comic strips or radio wiring diagrams', conceded that 'some few business and professional men ... admitted that they did read the more weighty editorial opinion' (1925:159).

Brown concludes that 'the impact of editorial opinion on other institutions and elites has been noted, but there is no evidence to suggest that such columns themselves influence readers' (1979:81-82). Nevertheless, van Dijk (1996) stresses that 'after opinion programs on TV like talk shows, and together with the Op-Ed articles,' editorials are still probably 'the widest circulated opinion discourses of society', despite the size of their actual daily readership. Indeed, 'research in media

[27] See Appendix 11.5 for circulation statistics.

communications shows that newspaper editorials play an important role in the definition of the public agenda priorities' (Le 2002:374).

'It may well be,' as Seymour-Ure suggests, that papers value leader articles 'more than their readers do' (1998b:43). At the same time, the study of leader articles is not necessarily interesting because they influence the readers, but because of their agenda-setting role. As a public statement of the corporate view of the newspaper they give an idea *what* the newspaper wants their readers to think about, but not necessarily *how* they should think (McCombs and Shaw 1972:66).

6.2.3. Writing the leader articles

How are leader articles written? The *Guardian* leaders are written by a dedicated leader writing team, consisting of 4-6 persons. They may do other things at the paper as well, but not as their primary responsibility. Every morning, a leader writing conference takes place, usually chaired by the Editor. During the leader writing conference, 'you will have a conversation about what the subject should be and what, in general terms, the line to be taken is' (Interview 15) and 'discuss what the issues are for that given day and who feels strongly about what' (Interview 10). In the afternoon, the topics are checked again, as the leader agenda is clearer by 3.30pm or so. The leaders are handed in approximately between 6-7pm. Apart from a dedicated team of leader writers, some other journalists may write them occasionally, depending on the topic. In general, the leader writers have specialised on special topics: 'One of the leader writers specialises in Foreign Affairs, another one will concentrate on Domestic Policy, another on Economics, another on Social Policy' (Interview 10). Whereas 'Fleet Street' newspapers usually have couple of dedicated leader writers, in Scotland, the leader is often written at the last moment and whatever is written, goes in. Consequently, the quality of leader-writing suffers (Interview 9).

A general assumption is that the leader column is written by the Editor of the newspaper. For instance, Rosenfeld (2000) hints that although anonymous, '"unsigned" is not quite right for editorials: the editors are often named in the masthead printed on the editorial page'. Indeed, many Editors would write leaders themselves, and if not writing themselves, they would try to sub-edit the leaders, 'not

to change the line but just to try to make sure that they have a consistent style to them and to stop people making silly mistakes' (Interview 15). But leaders are not always written by the staff journalists. For instance, one of our interviewees often writes leaders for other papers these days, although he could not name the papers 'for obvious reasons' (Interview 9), reinforcing the idea of leaders as the anonymous, corporate view. The current editor of the *Guardian*, Alan Rusbridger, does not write many leaders for his paper, although 'he does write leaders on other papers that I know about, like the *Times,* curiously'. The former editor of the *Times*, Peter Stothard, apparently 'really didn't write leaders at all', despite taking leader conferences, 'so there's no rule about this' (Interview 15). Seymour-Ure adds that 'at least three editors wrote opinion columns in their own names from time to time, as well as writing anonymous editorials' (1998b:45).

6.3. Editorial/political cartoons

The aim of looking at the political cartoons is to analyse the visual construction of Scottishness, and the representation of devolution in political cartoons published in major Scottish and British newspapers. Including the cartoons in my data corpus resulted in me getting involved with a wholly new field of research – visual sociology. I have explained the general principles of visual sociology and research using visual methodologies in Chapter 5. Here I will first discuss the role of political cartoons in newspapers, and assess why cartoons matter. The analysis of political cartoons in British and Scottish media in 1979 and 1997 can be found in Chapter 9, although I have used some cartoons from my data corpus for illustration in this chapter as well.

Gillian Rose has written a book for the researcher who may have 'found some intriguing visual materials to work with, knows that they raise some interesting issues, but isn't quite sure how to proceed from there' (Rose 2001:2). This was exactly the situation I found myself in few years ago. Analysing cartoons as part of my postgraduate research was not my initial intention. But while collecting data and conducting preliminary analysis of the leader articles for my research, I came across a number of political cartoons on the Op-Ed pages, many of them depicting devolution referenda and politics in Scotland, or Scottishness in general. Often they do this in

more clear-cut and outrageous way than the leader articles themselves – a point I will return to later.

6.3.1. Defining political cartoons

Cartoons 'vary considerably in their content, quality and sphere of influence' (Wigston 2002:76), but generally they are representational or symbolic drawings that make 'a satirical, witty, or humorous point' (Low and Williams 2000), or 'an independent statement or observation about political events or social policy' (Feldman 2000:165). Political cartoons belong to several genres of expression. They 'share some qualities with other graphic art forms, comic art forms, and journalistic commentary, but they are ultimately distinctive and unique forms of communication' (Edwards 1997:xi). Cartoons are a form of linguistic expression, together with other forms of political humour, despite their focus on the visual. And like other forms of linguistic expression, they draw upon 'the semantics and pragmatics of political language, contextual information and the political culture of a given society' (Feldman 2000:165). A typical cartoon, then, 'makes an independent statement or observation about political events or social policy' (ibid.). Technically speaking, a typical cartoon may or may not have a caption, and may comprise more than one panel, although the latter is less common in case of political cartoons.

Wigston highlights the uniqueness of cartoons 'when compared to other forms of mass-produced art which offer a reproduction of an object or event, such as photographs' (2002:76). The unique characteristics of political cartoon are following:

- They are not meant to exist as originals, but as copies in a newspaper.
- They are intended for mass reproduction.
- They are aimed at the general public and not at the 'contemplative readers' (Streicher 1967:433).
- They do not aim 'at being high art forms, but at influence and political practice'.

Wigston also insists that 'it is necessary to understand where the political cartoon fits in relation to other cartoon genres' (2002:76). He suggests the following typology of cartoons:

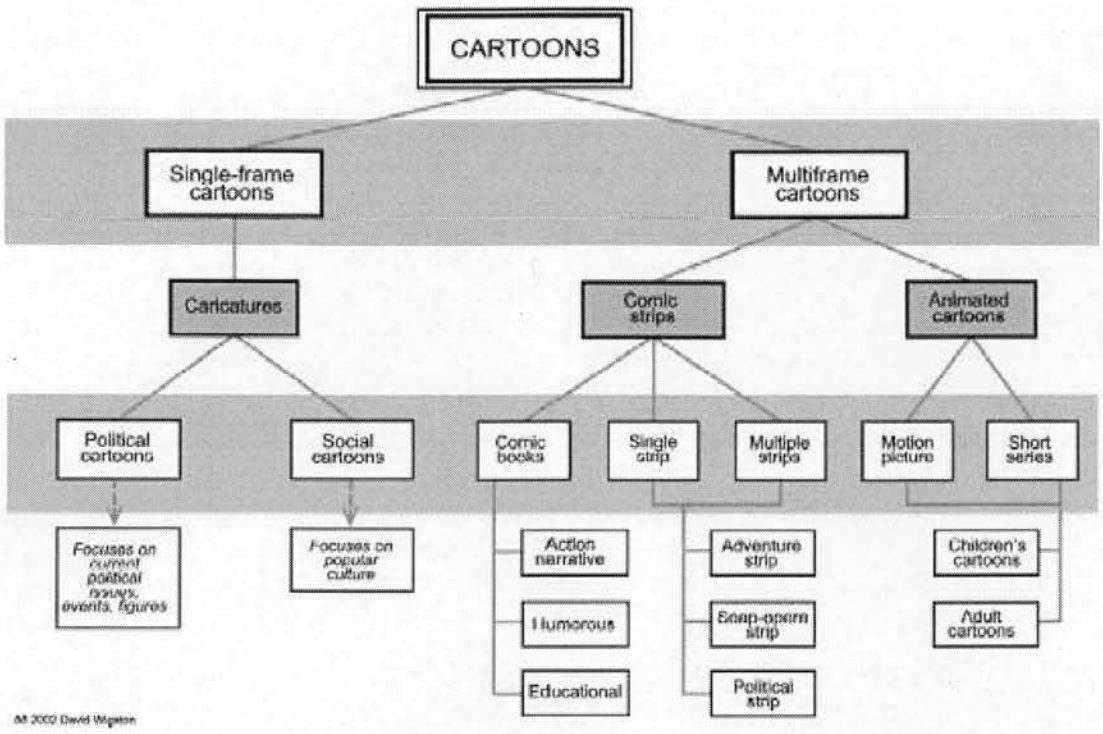


FIGURE 1
Types of cartoons

Wigston distinguishes between political and social caricatures. The first aim to 'ridicule, debunk or expose persons, groups or organisations engaged in societal power struggles'. The latter deal with 'non-political matters and has no concern regarding the distribution of power in society' (Wigston 2002:76). Edwards makes another important distinction between editorial cartoons and comic strips. Editorial cartoons 'bridge fact and fiction. They create imaginative worlds, but the central characters come from real life – politicians, Popes, First Ladies, and other public figures'. Comic strips, in contrast, can make political statements, but 'the central characters are fictional' (Edwards 1997:xii). Common cartoon topics cover different political or public affairs, a nation, political party, idea or social issue, social customs, personalities. While 'the differences between editorial cartoons and other cartoon forms may be ambiguous', these differences matter, 'because editorial cartoons raise different expectations and offer a different experience to many readers' (Edwards 1997:xii). Although distinguishing between social and political cartoons can sometimes be difficult, most of the cartoons in my data corpus can be described as political cartoons.

6.3.2. The role of political cartoons

There are three main functions that the cartoons serve in newspapers. *Firstly,* like headlines, the cartoons act as eye-catchers. They aim to halt the page-skimming reader, and draw their attention to the editorial page (Ammons *et al.* 1988; Tanner 2000). *Secondly*, by attracting readers to the editorial page, the political cartoons have an informative role as they 'remind readers of the achievements and flaws of the political process' (Feldman 2000:173) and by doing this perform 'an important educative role' (Tanner 2000). But cartoons do not just inform the readers, they also interpret current political affairs for the readers: the images are not just records, but they can also be constructs (van Leeuwen and Jewitt 2001a). Therefore, and *finally*, the main function of the cartoons is related to their socially constitutive nature. The cartoons aim to be part of the opinion discourse, they are 'editorials in pictures' or 'speaking pictures' as Seymour-Ure (1998:3) and Edwards (1997:8) respectively claim. Wigston (2002:74) suggests that cartoons indeed 'serve as an important adjunct to editorials, providing a summary of a certain situation or event'. 'The persuasive aspect of political cartoons is underscored by their traditional appearance within a socially and politically influential mass media outlet, the editorial pages of a newspaper' (Edwards 1997:8-9).

Cartoons can complement leader articles in their 'opinion changing' mission. Indeed, in many newspapers, the cartoonists are part of the editorial staff, although increasingly cartoonists also work for larger media syndicates. As part of the editorial staff, the cartoonists work *with* the editor. For example, Feldman found in his analysis of the depiction of Japanese political leaders in editorial cartoons, that the latter usually mirror the content of political articles (2000:176) and thus improve the chances of changing opinion. As such, the best cartoons are those 'which do not merely reflect current political opinion, but guide it' (Maurice and Cooper 2000) and this makes clever cartoons 'instruments of tremendous editorial power' (Cuff 1945:96). Both editorials and cartoons seek to change opinion, but they do it best in cooperation. An early study by Brinkman (1968) found the following relationships between cartoons and editorials:

- Cartoons presented with editorials result in greater opinion change than the presentation of cartoons or editorials alone.

- An editorial presented alone results in greater opinion change than a cartoon alone.
- Editorials and cartoons presented together are most effective in achieving opinion change.
- Similar arguments used in cartoons and editorials are more effective in producing closure than alternative arguments.

Thus 'cartoons can theoretically bring about opinion change under certain ideal circumstances' (Wigston 2002:91) and be 'an effective agent in moulding public opinion' (Maurice and Cooper 2000). The power of cartoons is also related to their emotive appeal:

> ... visual representations can be effective in shaping people's understanding of political reality and can influence the beliefs and behaviour of the public and politicians – sometimes even more powerfully than verbal messages. ... Gombrich (1982:138-140), for example, asserts that while language is superior to pictures alone at conveying information and formulating arguments, the visual image is 'supreme' in its ability to arouse emotions. (Feldman 2000:173)

Although Brinkman (1968) suggested that 'an editorial presented alone results in greater opinion change than a cartoon alone', Day believes the opposite. She claims:

> It can be presumed that cartoons play a major role in newspapers, with the use of an image perhaps creating a greater impact on readers than mere words: 'Because cartoons take up a small proportion of newspaper space compared to news and advertising, the focus of attention on them is proportionally greater than on the much more diffuse programming of the video media' (Puette 1992:74). (Day 2000)

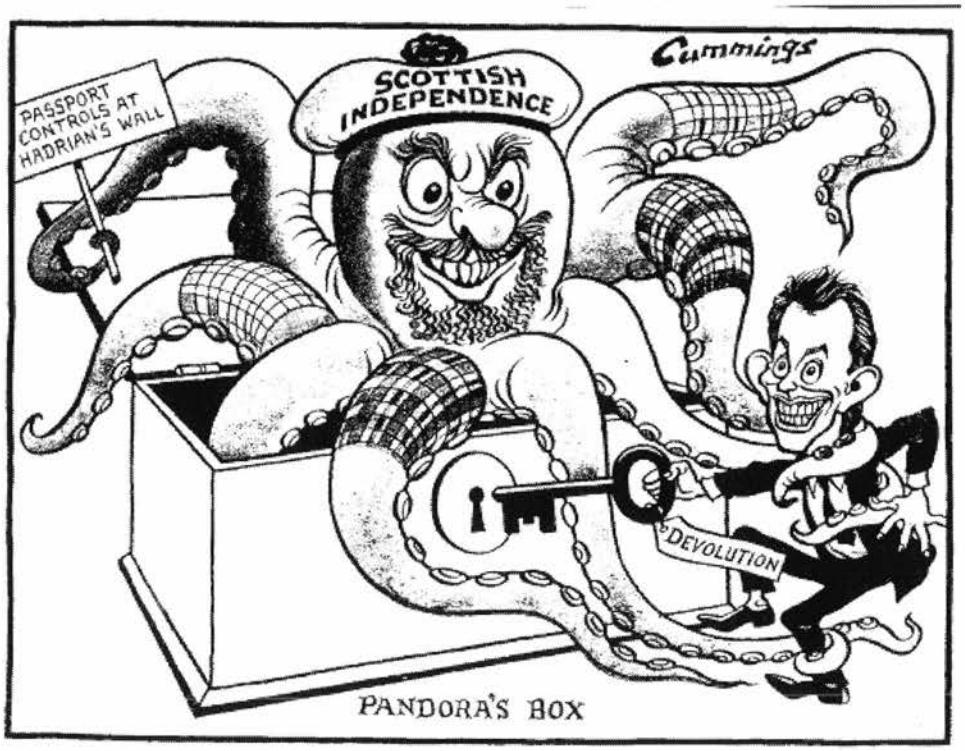
The following sections will consider some potential influence of political cartoons on the viewers and readers, by discussing their reception and content.

6.3.3. Reception of cartoons

Any influence of cartoons, of course, is related to their 'correct' interpretation by the readers. Social identities are constructed through ideologies of social difference, and 'different social groups (however defined) encode the world in very different ways and may thus interpret visual images in very different ways' (Rose 2001:96). An influential study by Carl (1968) found that a high percentage of people misinterpreted the meaning of political cartoons shown to them:

> Findings from the study indicated that readers' interpretation of cartoons varied dramatically from the original intention of the cartoonist. Correct interpretations varied according to employment level (which was determined, in turn, by education level) and class status. White-collar respondents showed a higher correlation (22%) than blue-collar respondents (9%) with the artists' intention. The evidence provided by this study implies that in most cases cartoonists are not getting their messages across to readers. This finding has a negative impact on the use of political cartoons in facilitating change in opinion. (Wigston 2002:91)

Feldman reminds us that 'political humour lies hidden deep within a society's psyche, drawing on common experience, images, and stereotypes from that society, and its culture' (2000:168). Unless the reader is familiar with the meaning of icons and symbols depicted on the cartoon, they are unlikely to take note of the subtle and hidden deeper messages on the cartoon. For example, the following cartoon assumes the familiarity of the myth of the Pandora's box in order to be correctly understood:



Cartoon 98. Published in *The Times* on 1 March 1997[28]

Wigston implies that there are a number of factors influencing the interpretation of political cartoons. These include the reader's ability to perceive detail in the drawing,

[28] Appendix 11.2 contains further details on the cartoons used in the thesis.

their cultural background, environment, their psychological mindset, their knowledge of current events and history and their ability to see analogies and a knowledge of allegories. Due to a number of different factors that influence the interpretation of cartoons, 'it is incorrect to assume that political cartoons are easily understood' (Wigston 2002:91-92; see also Gamson and Stuart 1992:62). As a result, 'we can never really know exactly what the impact of a given cartoon was on a given reader or group of readers' (Coupe 1969:83). Despite claims that cartoons play a major role in the newspapers and influence people possibly even more than written articles, that a picture is worth a thousand words (Seymour-Ure 1986, 1998a; Day 2000; Feldman 2000), Coupe suggests that 'in an epoch of mass literacy it would be perverse to maintain that the resident cartoonist is likely to exert a greater influence than the leader-writers and commentators in plain prose' (1969:84).

Whatever the influence of cartoons on the readership, the prominence of political cartoons in the press 'is an *outcome* in its own right, independent of evidence on the degree to which the audience is being influenced' (Gamson and Stuart 1992:56). Edwards adds:

> Research does not conclusively indicate that editorial cartoons have direct effects on voter preference. But the position of editorial cartoonists as a 'public forum' of political commentary, their use of cultural symbol and allusion, and their capacity to mirror the constructed realities offered by elites and consumed by the public, makes them important artefacts in the arena of political discourse. Through the window/frame of the political cartoonist ... we see the political culture displayed and interpreted. (1997:xiv)

6.3.4. Content of cartoons

As mentioned, many cartoons are quite outrageous and would probably not be printed in text form. Consider the following cartoon:

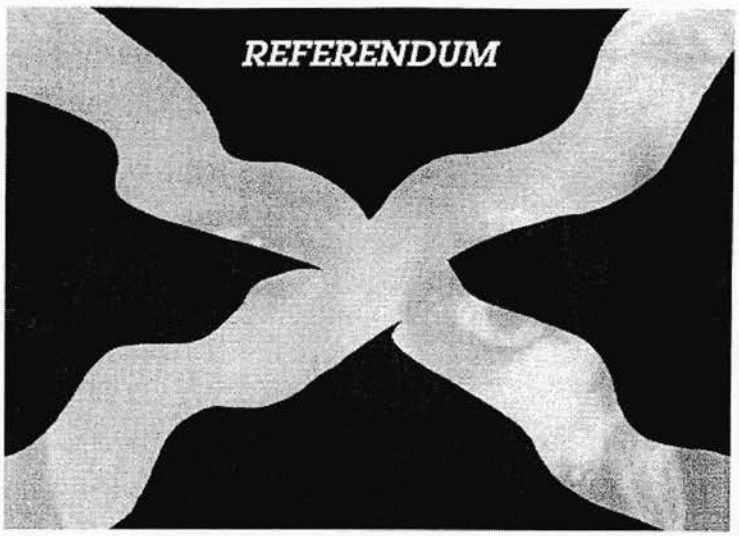


Cartoon 29. Caption: 'Och, I put down 'Yes' – but I thought It was EVOLUTION we were voting for.' Published in *Daily Mail* on 2 March 1979

This is a typical example of the possible outrageousness of cartoons. In this case the *Daily Mail* - 'the bugle of "Middle England"', as Nairn calls it (2002a:118) - is implying that Scots are in some undefined way racially and biologically backward and in need of *evolution*, as opposed to *devolution*. This political incorrectness is typical of cartoons, and 'the power of pictures sets cartoons apart from other editorials. Their graphic imagery can convey messages that would be unacceptable if spelled out in words' (Feldman 2000:173; see also Seymour-Ure 1986:170).

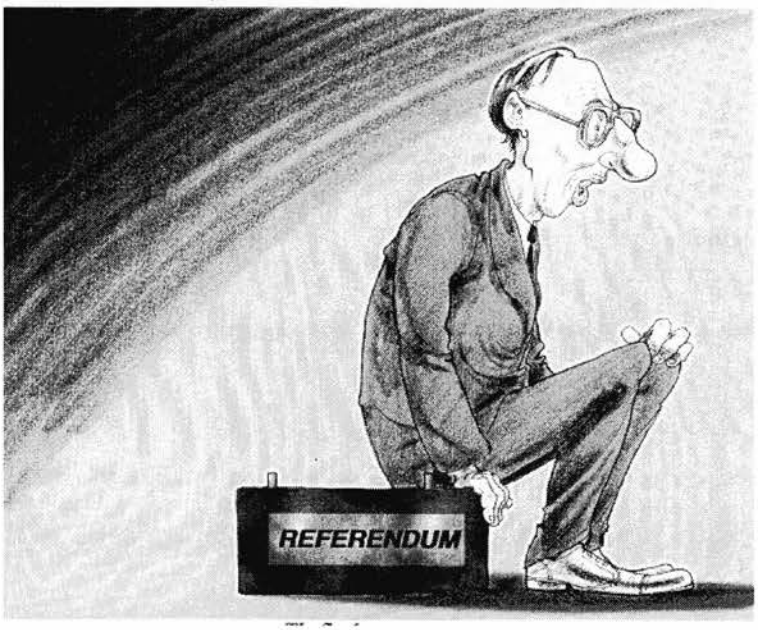
As mentioned earlier, cartoons make a satirical, witty, or humorous point, and in doing so, they are 'almost always condescending' (Choy *et al.* 1994:20-21). However, Wigston notes that although satire and ridicule have always been associated with cartoons, the 'original concept did not imply any form of ridicule' (2002:77). Therefore, cartoons do not necessarily have to be also caricatures, and sometimes they simply offer 'a political allegory on a given political situation' (Coupe 1969:87). Indeed, 'from a rhetorical perspective, the entertainment function of editorial cartoons

is secondary to its provision of political commentary' (Edwards 1997:xii). If we look at the following cartoons, then caricature and humour are not the most significant features of them. The first cartoon was published following the sudden death of Princess Diana:



Cartoon 53. Caption: 'Collateral damage.' Published in the *Herald* on 4 September 1997

Instead of parody and caricature, the cartoon, by presenting a black-and-white image of the Saltire over the eyes of Diana, aims to 'instantly make a point that would be difficult to articulate in written text and often leave a lasting impressions on the reader' (Wigston 2002:74). Here is another cartoon by the same author:



Cartoon 56. Caption: 'The flat battery.' Published in the *Herald* on 8 September 1997

This time the cartoon depicts an exhausted Donald Dewar, but again, the cartoon is not intended to be punitive; it is just summarising the state of affairs, by suggesting that Dewar has run out of energy due to the devolution campaign shadowed by Paisley crisis[29] and the death of Princess Diana. Consequently, this depiction of Donald Dewar presents him in a rather sympathetic light. As Coupe (1969:92) writes, 'the constant repetition of a given politician's features establishes him as a person in our minds and the familiarity inevitably breeds [a] measure of sympathetic contempt'. Thus the aim of the cartoon is not necessarily to ridicule Donald Dewar, but to offer a poignant summary of the situation.

As my cartoon corpus is not representative, findings cannot be generalised. But looking at the discursive construction of Scottish devolution and identity in cartoons helps us understand the symbolic contest on this issue and how it has evolved during the two devolution campaigns. And they are worth looking at, as cartoons, just like leader articles and other media texts, serve an agenda-setting function (Edwards 1997:7).

6.4. Compiling the data corpus

The last part of the chapter will explain the choice of time frames, choice of newspapers, and sampling of data for the analysis.

6.4.1. Time frame

Billig in his *Banal Nationalism* is particularly interested in the flagging of nationhood on *ordinary* days, i.e. on days which are not 'of national celebration or intense electoral campaigning' (1995:109). However, I have chosen to analyse the media discourse during the devolution referendum campaigns in Scotland. I have several reasons for choosing these time frames. Therborn (1995:230) writes that 'in the field of collective identities, the most dramatic and important moments are wars and the

[29] In the wake of the 1997 devolution referendum, the Labour MP for Paisley South, Gordon McMaster, committed suicide on 27.7.1997. It was widely speculated at the time that a whispering campaign may have played a prominent part in McMaster's suicide. Apparently McMaster was a 'victim of a poison pen campaign run by a local councillor.' (Andrew Parker & Jason Allardyce, *The Scotsman*, 4.8.1997). The 'Paisley sleaze' was consequently a prominent issue at all Labour press conferences in the run up to the devolution referendum, and figured prominently in cartoons at the time.

breakdown of a given state order'. Devolution in Scotland cannot be classified as a breakdown of a given state order, but it nevertheless constitutes a major constitutional change that problematises national identity. McCrone (2001a:153) writes:

> Quite suddenly, identity politics are back on the agenda, for, in Mercer's words, 'identity only becomes an issue when it is in crisis, when something assumed to be fixed, coherent and stable is displaced by the experience of doubt and uncertainty' (1990:43). This problematising process makes it much easier to see how people are involved in 'personalising' national identity.

The same goes for the media. In such moments of change and crisis, the identity-construction is more explicit, as 'the 'Nation' and national sentiments can be cast up for discussion and become a generalised point of focus and come close to generating something akin to Durkheim's "collective effervescence"' (McIntosh *et al.* 2004:46). Paraphrasing Anderson (1991), the imagining of Scottish national community is in full swing, making it sociologically just as interesting as banal flagging on so-called ordinary days. Also, the Self/Other dialectic is intensified at the time of political, social and economic crises, as the identity of the nation is put in question and the significant Others become more salient.

Hence, I have chosen these particular moments of time that Chilton (1987) has aptly called 'critical discourse moments', i.e. events that 'stimulate commentary' by various social actors and the media (cited in Gamson and Stuart 1992:64). I am looking at how the mass media in Scotland use and contest Scottishness in 'the various struggles around the formation of a Scottish parliament'. This gives us an insight into how 'identity is used to mobilise people in support of, or in opposition to' (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:x-xi) the devolution project. Consequently, my chosen critical discourse moments are the Scottish devolution referenda of 1 March 1979, and 11 September 1997. My data corpus covers a four-month time period – a month before and a month after each of the referenda. Although the devolution campaign started in both cases much earlier, the one-month period prior the referendum covers the most intense period of national 'navel-gazing' and debating of nationness. Stretching the period under analysis for another month after the devolution referendum allows us cover the discursive reflections of the referendum result, and the impact of the 1979 defeat and 1997 victory (at least as defined by the pro-devolutionary Scottish newspapers in question) on the fate and future of Scottish nation.

6.4.2. Newspapers

My data corpus includes leader articles from following titles: *The Scotsman, The (Glasgow) Herald, The Guardian, The Daily Telegraph, The Times* (was on strike in 1979, so leader articles have only been collected in 1997), *The Independent* (only 1997, as the paper was launched in 1985). Although I have gathered material from both British and Scottish broadsheet newspapers, in the thesis I am only analysing in-depth the material from the two main Scottish broadsheets, *The (Glasgow) Herald* and *The Scotsman.*

I used microfilms and paper copies to collect data from 1979, and microfilms and CD-ROMs to access data from 1997, using the resources the University of Edinburgh Main Library, and the National Library of Scotland. For cartoons, I used microfilms at the National Library of Scotland, as well as the online CartoonHub database in Kent.

6.4.3. Data sampling

Purposive sampling was used instead of truly random sampling to compile the data corpus for the current research. The latter did not seem justified in this case, because of the 'limited usefulness and inherent difficulty in drawing true random samples of media content'. In research 'where scholars are interested in particular sort of coverage, such as foreign or campaign news, sampling by days often produces a great deal of irrelevant material' (Althaus *et al.* 2001:708). When choosing 'a relatively narrow time limit for the study', 'the reliability and validity of this type of coding is likely to be better than that of proxy coding ... case studies limit the generalizability of results' (Althaus *et al.* 2001:709). Again, as my data corpus includes 110 leader articles, I do not claim 'representativeness in a statistical sense' as such (Edmunds and Turner 2001:2). Nevertheless, I do believe that the research furthers our understanding of subtle changes in national identity formation in the media.

My data corpus consists of three different corpora:

- 110 leader articles.
- 86 political cartoons.
- 18 transcribed interviews with journalists in Edinburgh, Glasgow and London.

Below is a more detailed explanation of the principles of data collection and use of various corpora.

6.4.3.1. Leader articles

All leader articles were read day by day for the selected time frame, totalling 460 leader articles, and all leader articles that discussed devolution in general, or the devolution referendum in particular, were included in the data corpus. Such a sampling rule yielded 110 leader articles, i.e. 23.9 % from all leader articles in that time frame:

Newspaper	1979	1997
The Scotsman	103 leaders in total 27 about devolution (26.2 per cent)	151 leaders in total 40 about devolution (24.5 per cent)
The Herald	99 leaders in total 13 about devolution (13.1 per cent)	107 leaders in total 30 about devolution (28.0 per cent)

The data corpus includes all the leader articles from the *Scotsman* and the *(Glasgow) Herald* from a month before and month after the referendum that discussed devolution and its various aspects in Scotland. Thus for 1979, the time period covered is from February 1st until March 31st (referendum on March 1st), and for 1979, the time period covered is from August 11th until October 10th (referendum on September 11th). Roughly speaking, about one-third of all articles are from the 1979 devolution referendum, and two-thirds from the 1997 referendum; three-fifths of the articles are from the *Scotsman*, and two-fifths from the *Herald*:

Total: 110	1979	1997
The Scotsman	27 (21.0%)	40 (38.1%)
The Herald	13 (12.4%)	30 (28.6%)

All leader articles were copied verbatim into text document (RTF format) and imported into NVivo database. As I am looking at the discursive construction of national identities, then 'discourse analysis depends not on the quantity of material analysed, but its quality. "What matters," [(Tonkiss 1998:253)] says, "is the richness of textual detail, rather than the number of texts analysed"' and the qualitative researcher 'may quite legitimately select from all possible sources a few that seem

particularly interesting' (Rose 2001:143). Thus although the data corpus consists of 110 leader articles, not all of them are analysed in-depth in the findings chapter.

6.4.3.2. Political cartoons

The visual analysis is based on cartoons collected from the two Scottish broadsheets and a number of British newspapers. Most of the cartoons are retrieved from the searchable online database of the Centre for the Study of Cartoons and Caricature, University of Kent at Cantebury (http://library.kent.ac.uk/cartoons). In addition to the cartoons available online, I have a number of microfilm printouts of relevant cartoons. The cartoon corpus includes all the relevant cartoons from the *Herald, Scotsman, Guardian, Telegraph, Independent* and *Times*, as well as cartoons from other newspapers available in the CartoonHub database. The cartoons cover the same time period as my textual data, enabling comparison between textual and non-verbal discourses. 48 political cartoons are from the two Scottish broadsheets, and another 38 political cartoons from the same time period from the British tabloids and broadsheets. Consequently, my data corpus contains 86 cartoons from a month before and a month after the devolution referenda. The cartoons were distributed as following:

POLITICAL CARTOONS			
Year	**1979**	**1997**	**Total**
The (Glasgow) Herald	9	16	**25**
The Scotsman	12	11	**23**
The Telegraph	7	3	**10**
The Guardian	0	8	**8**
The Times	0	3	**3**
The Independent	0	5	**5**
The Sun	4	0	**4**
Daily Mail	3	0	**3**
Daily Express	3	1	**4**
Evening Standard	1	0	**1**
Total	**39**	**47**	**86**

The cartoons are analysed both quantitatively and qualitatively. The quantitative method of content analysis is used to identify the main actors and topics in the cartoons; qualitative method is used to identify further topics and discourses of the

cartoons. The qualitative study is conducted in order to contextualise fully the cartoons in the general media discourse during the devolution referenda.

6.4.3.3. Interviews

Interview data is mainly used to illustrate and contextualise data from leader articles and political cartoons. All interviews were transcribed and added into NVivo database. Interviews form an integral part of the Leverhulme media research project[30]. The interview data corpus consists of 18 interview transcripts conducted by Dr MacInnes, Dr Rosie and myself during 2002-2004. Full outline of interviews can be found in Appendix 11.3.

[30] See http://www.institute-of-governance.org/forum/Leverhulme/TOC.html for more details.

7. *Homo nationalis* and *homo externus*

This chapter will look at the discursive construction of national Self and Others. It will start by looking at the headlines, then analyse the construction of *homo Scotus* and *homo externus* in the leader articles of the *(Glasgow) Herald* and the *Scotsman* in 1979 and 1997.

7.1. Headlines

Chapter 6 suggests that headlines summarise and frame the article, provide the readers with perspectives, and offer interpretative frameworks through which the leader articles are to be understood. Often they 'encapsulate the newspaper's ideological values and attitudes' (Teo 2000:14). Van Dijk writes:

> a choice of words in newspaper headlines plays an important role. Not only do they express the definition of the situation, but they also signal the social and political opinions of the newspaper about the events. That is, headlines not only globally define or summarize an event, they also evaluate it. Hence, the lexical style of headlines has ideological implications. (1991:53)

To illustrate this, consider, for example, the following headlines from the *Daily Telegraph* in February 1979. A week before the referendum the paper led with a leader article entitled *How to say 'no' in Scotland* (Feb 21). Shortly afterwards, the paper dedicated an editorial to devolution three days in a row: *Devolution madness* (Feb 26), *Why 'noes' must vote* (Feb 27) and *A kingdom on the brink* (Feb 28). It is evident from the lexical choices made in the headlines alone that the *Telegraph* was strongly opposed to the devolution – and eager to convince its readers likewise.

Looking at the headlines of the leader articles in my data corpus (see Appendix 11.1), for the first time frame, 1979, several points are of interest. First of all, on the day of the referendum, both the *Guardian* and the *Telegraph* withheld from mentioning the devolution referendum in Scotland in their leader articles. In contrast, the Scottish broadsheets brought their leader articles from their usual spot to the front page, a move indicating the perceived prominence of the article (Coats and Mulkey 1950:540). The leader articles on devolution were printed on the prime spot and under an enlarged headline – emphasising the importance of the referendum both for the newspaper and for its readers, alias Scotland.

There is lots of banal and not so banal flagging of the nation in the headlines. First of all, there is manifest flagging of Scotland: *Scotland's choice* (SCOT050279), *An act of faith – for Scotland* (HERA130279), *Scotland's exports* (SCOT270279), *Scotland must give a decisive answer today* (HERA010379). Scotland is anthropomorphised in some of these headlines through personification metaphors. By giving Scotland an agency, the non-living entity Scotland is brought to life. Such personification metaphors have 'high suggestive force', as in reference to 'the mental construct of nation, these metaphors also imply intra-national sameness and equality' (Wodak *et al.* 1999:44). The (whole of) Scotland has a choice today, and it is Scotland that must give *a* decisive answer today, implying that the choice is uncontroversial and consensual. The same personification metaphor can also be described as metonymic use of 'Scotland' as in 'country for persons'. Cases where

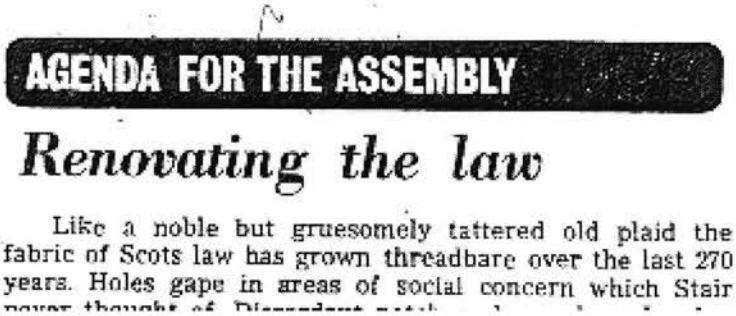
> something is replaced by human being or a group of human beings, represent cases of the tropological crossing of metonymy and personification. Simultaneous tropological multiple membership is ignored; if one views personification metonymies (which are characterised by combination of, for example, the name of an institution plus a verb which normally describes human behaviour) exclusively as personifying metaphors, as does Reger (1977, 1978). His biased perspective gives the wrong impression that such personifying metonymies serve to bring something to life, making it more concrete, whereas in fact the opposite is true: such metonymies are abstractions of concrete (responsible) actors. (Wodak *et al.* 1999:47-48).

Thus while the headline *Scotland must give a decisive answer today* (HERA010379), on the one hand, uses a personification metaphor for bringing Scotland to life, it is also metonymically replacing the people of Scotland with more abstract and generalising notion of 'Scotland'.

And then there is 'we', the national first person plural, representing one way of banal flagging of nationhood. Billig analyses a number of headlines in his book, including 'Turning our industrial sunset into new dawn' in the *Guardian* and 'Why our taxes need never rise again' in the *Daily Telegraph*, claiming that 'the headline did not specify who 'we' were: readers could be expected to recognise their national selves' (Billig 1995:115). The 'national self' in question was Britain, he suggests. But it is more complex than that in Scotland. Consider the following example from the *Scotsman*, a leader article called *Why we must vote Yes* (SCOT230279). Billig is right – this 'we' does not refer to the *Scotsman*'s editorial team only – it is a national, not

editorial 'we'. It is *Scottish national*[31] and Scottish readers could indeed be expected to recognise their 'national selves'. Similarly, after the disappointing referendum result, the *Herald* asks *Does this have to be our last word?* (HERA030379), again referring to the people of Scotland rather than to its editorial team in Glasgow. But a few weeks later the *Scotsman* headlined with *Here we go again*, referring to the imminence of General Election that awaits not the newspaper, not Scotland, but the whole of Britain. Here, the national frame of reference is different from the previous ones. I will return to the notion of 'we' in the next chapter.

The *Scotsman* ran a special series of leader articles, *Agenda for the Assembly*, in 1979, which discussed various potential policy areas for the future Scottish legislature, as seen below:



AGENDA FOR THE ASSEMBLY

Renovating the law

Like a noble but gruesomely tattered old plaid the fabric of Scots law has grown threadbare over the last 270 years. Holes gape in areas of social concern which Stair

The Scotsman, 12 February 1979, page 6

This is rather unusual for leader articles, as they tend not to be 'serialised'. By doing this, the *Scotsman* implied that the topic was worthy enough of special attention, and was effectively setting the agenda for its readership by flagging the Assembly[32].

For the 1997 devolution referendum the picture was somewhat different. Both Scottish broadsheets and all major British broadsheets ran an editorial on the day of devolution referendum in Scotland: *The rebirth of the nation* (SCOT110997), *A worthy and lively debate: All worries of apathy have been dispelled* (HERA110997), *Seize the opportunity: Scots can be trusted to govern their own lives* (GUAR110997),

[31] Billig seems to suggest the existence of 'British national we' across the UK.

[32] Note that the *Glasgow Herald* always referred to the assembly, whereas *The Scotsman* wrote about the Assembly, the latter possibly indicating higher perceived importance of the proposed institution in 1979.

Return of the Braveheart as a new battle unfolds (TELE110997)[33], *Decision day: 'Yes, no' would the worst result of all* (TIME110997), *Yes, yes is the best and bravest answer* (INDE110997)[34]. All but the *Telegraph* also dedicated their editorial cartoons to devolution in Scotland – a marked shift from 1979, when the main British broadsheets did not consider the devolution referendum even worthy of their editorial textual comment on the day.

Overall, the picture during the 1997 referendum campaign is quite similar to 1979. There is the routine patriotic flagging of Scotland in the headlines again: *Scottish tax-varying powers* (HERA220897), *New role of Scottish Secretary* (SCOT250897), *Racism in Scotland: Attacks on English a disgrace* (HERA290897), *Shadow boxing for Scottish business* (SCOT050997), *A glittering prize for Scotland* (SCOT070997), *Considered view of Scotland the sober* (SCOT140997), *The opposition Scotland needs* (SCOT150997), *Responsibility for Dounreay: Scottish Office must act decisively* (HERA150997), *Scottish Tory realism: Home Rule best chance to revive fortunes* (HERA260997), *Pride of place for a Scottish parliament* (SCOT051097), *Is Scotland in Europe or not?* (SCOT061097). The words 'Scotland' and 'Scottish' appear in 10 headlines out of 70 in Scottish broadsheets, i.e. in 14% of all articles. Again, note the anthropomorphised use of 'Scotland' in some instances.

There are also several examples of banal flagging of Scotland, of flagging that does not really say it, but we all know – or are assumed to know – what the paper means. For instance, *The wealth of the nation* (SCOT180897) is about taxation powers of devolved Scotland; *Industry must find a voice* (SCOT290897) writes about Scottish industry; *Museums and the national interests* (SCOT300897) is about the National Museums of Scotland; *Raise the voice of a nation* (SCOT080997) and *The rebirth of a nation* (SCOT110997) both refer to Scotland. There is no need to specify that it is Scotland as, Billig has correctly told us, this is banal knowledge. But just when the Scottish readers might have got used to recognising their Scottish national selves in the 'nation' named in the headlines, the *Herald* leads with *Emotions of a nation* (HERA040997). In this headline the deixis 'nation' refers to the British nation

[33] Note how the *Telegraph* uses the Braveheart metaphor, riding on the back of the 1995 Hollywood blockbuster.
[34] No comparative data is available for *The Times* and *The Independent* in 1979. The first was on the strike, and the second was only launched in 1986.

mourning the sudden death of Princess Diana, and not just to the Scottish nation. And finally, there is the above-mentioned national deixis 'we' again: *Why we need Tam* (HERA110897), *The real decision we face* (HERA200897), *Life must go on: Why we foster devolution debate* (HERA030997), *Now let's celebrate: We wish you a happy new era* (HERA130997) – some of them referring to Scotland, some to the newspaper.

Some headlines contain war or fighting metaphors – as in *A home rule peace process* (SCOT110897), and *Refighting a losing battle* (SCOT270897); some include evolutionary metaphors: *The rebirth of a nation* (SCOT110997), and *The first day of a new life* (SCOT130997). Especially the second headline gives a lot of promise of a bright future ahead - the use of 'first' and 'new' indicate a change from the (Westminster-dominated) past.

Overall, the language of the headlines is very positive and optimistic: *A glittering prize for Scotland* (SCOT070997), *The rebirth of a nation* (SCOT110997), *A triumph of the settled will* (SCOT120997), *The first day of a new life* (SCOT130997), *Now let's celebrate: we wish you a happy new era* (HERA130997), etc. Devolution is seen through a positive prism, bringing prosperity and happiness to Scotland. By making this clear in the headlines, the following articles are framed in a similarly positive and optimistic way.

7.2. Discursive constructions of *homo nationalis*

One element of the discursive construction of national identity is the strategy of group-definition and construction, or 'we-discourse'. For example, Wodak *et al.* identified 'essentialist representations of the Austrian national character and the *homo Austriacus*' in their research (1999:25). They operationalise the concept of *homo nationalis* as following:

> The stereotypical image of a *homo Austriacus* is connected to the belief that there is a 'typical Austrian character', 'typically Austrian' behaviour, and an 'Austrian mentality', and in the end is also connected to the fantasy of 'Austrian ancestry'. It has also served as a kind of avatar of 'essentialist' notions of what is specifically Austrian. (Wodak *et al.* 1999:54)

Such essentialist stereotypes correspond to the ethnic definition of nationness, or the idea of *Kulturnation*. They also illustrate the psychological understanding of national character as 'rooted in nature rather than society':

> ... psychological work on nationhood tends to naturalise national identity. It does so both in the sense of representing national identity as a natural aspect of a people rather than an aspect of its social practices, and also in the sense of presupposing that each nation has a single authentic nature. (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:28)

7.2.1. *Homo Scotus*

It is interesting to see whether Scotland, usually presented as a civic nation as opposed to ethnic nation, is essentialised in the media in a similar way. Is there an attempt to construct a *homo Scotus* or a 'Scottish person' in the media? What does being Scottish mean according to the Scottish media? The following section aims to shed light on these questions. It will look at instances trying to describe the 'character' of Scotland, 'the people' and 'the nature' of Scotland etc., in a similar vein to the attempts to discursively create a *homo Austriacus* in Austria. This can be described as generic construction of the Other, trying to 'give a universal answer to questions of 'what they are like' or 'what they look like'' (Galasinska and Galasinski 2003:849).

7.2.1.1. Banal existence of distinct Scottish identity.

David McCrone writes that 'being Scottish has become stronger and more culturally diverse in the past twenty years'. But to say so does not imply 'that we know what people mean when they say they are Scottish, or that it is like a badge pinned to the lapel, there for everyone to read' (2001a:174). There is a tendency to imply in the Scottish media that there is something that can be called Scottish identity, but it is less commonplace to try to define it, to pin it down. The readers are assumed to know what Scottish identity means and that they agree on a common definition of Scottishness - hence the media need not to offer definitions of Scottishness. National identities are seen as 'essential, given, and non-problematic' (McCrone 1998:635), and 'at a common-sense level Scotland plainly exists' (McCrone 2001a:37). Take the following extract from the *Herald*:

> preserving **the distinct Scottish identity** on which the present demands for devolution are partly based. (HERA230279)

The extract uses justification strategy and appeals to the need to preserve 'the distinct Scottish identity', but no further explanation is provided as to how Scottish identity is special and distinct. The reader is assumed to agree, firstly, that Scottish identity is distinct (note the hidden assumption of the existence of the Other(s) that Scotland is distinct *from*), and secondly, also to know what that distinct identity is about (i.e. the nature of that distinctiveness). No-one doubts the distinctiveness of Scottish nation, not even the Tories:

> No-one, not even leaders of the Conservative Party, has dared to deny Scottish nationhood. (SCOT080997)

This wording highlights the taken-for-granted nature of Scottish nationhood. And this particular distinctiveness is fuelled by distinct Scottish institutions. The following extract informs:

> The main reason is that a bad scheme does not destroy a good principle, which is that **a nation - such as Scotland undoubtedly is, with its own legal, educational, and other systems, not to speak of a strong sense of national identity -** has the right to govern its own affairs. (HERA260279)

The article insists that Scotland is 'undoubtedly' a nation, and the sense of national identity is equally strong – similarly to the political nationalist who takes the claim that Scotland is a nation 'as axiomatic so that it is a self-evident truth' (McCrone 2001a:47). But it elaborates that Scotland's 'own' legal, educational and other systems make Scotland a nation. This is re-emphasised three paragraphs later in the same leader article (note how Scotland has suddenly curiously been personified as 'she' instead of 'it' previously):

> The Union was a political work of genius, which for more than 250 years has conferred incalculable benefits on both Scotland and England. Scotland especially benefited. **She retained her distinctive institutions, above all, her law and her Kirk, while enjoying all the economic advantages of a united island.** (HERA260279)

Scotland is, again, unquestionably a distinct nation. It has distinctive institutions and a strong sense of national identity, and even its prison service is distinctive:

> The report of the inquiry into the prison service in the UK is awaited, but clearly there will be much more for the Assembly to discuss in the light of **Scotland's distinctive experience.** (SCOT790216)

Scotland's experience is unique and distinctive, and the newspapers do not see that this 'fact' requires further explanation. The *Scotsman* continues with a very similar uncontested construction of Scottishness:

> There would be the chance of developing educational aims **suited to Scottish traditions and needs**, instead of importing policy like a Bill with clauses tagged on to apply to Scotland. (SCOT080279)
>
> Perhaps it was **the Scottish way to do this thing,** after years of hesitation, with final certainty. (SCOT120997)
>
> **A Scottish way of doing Scottish things**
> There may yet turn out to be **a distinctively Scottish way of doing things**, of course. The Scottish sense of community is important. Our priorities as a society need not be identical to those of our neighbours. But the virtues which will earn us our corn will remain the same. The global market economy is a reality that cannot (and should not) be wished away. Here, at least, the road here is open to **an enterprise economy driven by Scotland's social values**. (SCOT130997)

The current bills and legislations are inherently non-Scottish. What these 'Scottish traditions and needs' consist of, is not explained in the leader article. It is a-matter-of-fact statement, and once again it is assumed that every reader will nod in agreement with the newspaper and not question the existence and character of these distinctive and taken-for-granted traditions and needs. The second and third extracts are similar – every reader is expected to agree that there is a 'distinctively Scottish way of doing Scottish things', and to know what these are. Also, Scotland have special, Scottish social values – all of which distinguish Scotland from its Other(s). Note the strong Self/Other dialectic in the last extract.

7.2.1.2. Characterising the Scottish nation.

Scotland is often said to be constructed as civic, not ethnic, nation. In such a context, expressions of nationness are expected to be civic as well. Thus 'a refusal to identify or promote a national character may [...] be a way of expressing a non-nationalistic nationhood against a background where nationalism can be equated with imperialism, racism and bigotry' (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:205). That is to say that a civic identity would be promoted, stripped of any 'ethnic' dimensions, including national character. The reason behind this is that

> the very use of the term 'national character' carries the danger of mistaking description for explanation, for its meaning is marked by its origins. In psychological discourse, it is hard to escape the trappings of a term like 'character' which points to intra-psychic structures as the basis for public behaviours. It is a problem that afflicts all those who use such language, whatever their disciplinary origins and whatever their intentions. (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:29-30)

In any case, the idea of a 'national character' is 'a mere stereotypical phantasmagoria which has no real counterpart outside of the minds of those who believe in it' (Wodak *et al.* 1999:29). Thus *homo Austriacus* does not exist, and neither does *homo Scotus.* However,

> when embracing a national category, when seeking to define the nation and, above all, when invoking the national imagination in order to mobilize its population, the use of psychological trait terms was as commonplace in the mouths of politicians as it is in psychology textbooks. (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:205)

The same happens in the media, where attributions of a particular character to the Scottish nation abound. The following extracts attempt to construct and describe 'the national character' of the Scots in more detail:

> Indeed, it is a tribute **to the perspicacity of the Scots** that they have recognised that this Act has many shortcomings. [...] **A nation as proud as the Scots** is surely willing to take the chance to win what is a great prize. (HERA010379)
>
> We might be **dour and reticent** but, with this historic decision, we have earned the right, yes, to be flamboyant in celebrating our boldness. (HERA130997)

Scots are described as 'perspicacious,' 'proud' and brave/courageous. Scots may be dour and reticent, but they are also bold. There is no bad without good. However, the Scottish scepticism and self-doubt can occasionally be self-defeating:

> The Scots are **a sceptical people, and there is nothing wrong with that**. Too often, however, it has been our habit - more of an intellectual vice - **to doubt even ourselves**. Given our history, this is foolish. Given the possibilities of the future, it is utterly self-defeating. Self-belief is essential when you are remaking a nation. Scots, on this occasion, have nothing of which they need be afraid. (SCOT080997)

The last extract has an interesting reference to 'remaking' the Scottish nation. It suggests that Scotland has been made, and then unmade in the past – possibly in 1707, and is now in the process of being remade. But not all characterisations of Scots are positive:

> The power to shape our educational system should be a particularly valuable product of devolution. Here, if anywhere, **we need to regain the sense of responsibility and enthusiasm which mature people get from making their own decisions and not living under the tutelage of policy-makers preoccupied with other problems.** (SCOT080279)
>
> **Scotland,** we believe**, will regain its self-respect and lose its sense of resentment.** [...]
> In recent years, in particular, **Scotland's creativity has seemed stifled, its energies dissipated. The country has seemed to shrink to match the modesty of the ambitions it has been allowed. A parliament alone will not change that, but without a parliament there is no real hope of revival.** (SCOT110997)

Scots – marked by the national deixis 'we' in the first extract – need to regain the sense of responsibility, enthusiasm, and their maturity. Immaturity, irresponsibility and indifference are not traits to take pride in; neither is the sense of resentment, lack of self-respect, stifled creativity, dissipated energy and modest ambitions mentioned in the second extract. Note how these are all presented as non-intrinsic to the Scots, but brought on by external factors. If Scots only did not live under 'the tutelage of policy-makers preoccupied with other problems', they would regain their maturity, responsibility and zealousness. If Scotland would be allowed to be more ambitious, all the ills would at least begin disappearing. This supports Luther's findings that situational attributions 'tend to be made in reference to negative actions/affairs' (Luther 2001:215). Situational attributions are indeed quite common in Scottish media whenever something negative is discussed in relation to Scotland. This can be seen again in the following extracts:

> In the last analysis it will be good for Scotland because it **will restore the self-confidence which dependence has sapped** and exorcise the **defeatism** which possesses the No camp. It will preserve **a sense of national identity, encourage a constructive kind of patriotism and revive faith in our culture and traditions**. The Scotland Act is no model of legislation. The powers of the Assembly are limited. Yet the choice is momentous. A No success would complete the process of assimilation, of reducing Scotland to a mere geographical expression. Scotland's survival as a nation, a worthy partner in the UK, depends on an emphatic and decisive Yes. (SCOT010379)

> Indeed, we could argue, if our purpose was contention, that these are the two principal symptoms of the malaise which a parliament should cure: **a culture grown too frightened of taking risks; a people grown too practiced at spectating during the exercise of power**. (SOS070997)
>
> Nations evolve. **They evolve best making free choices, freely expressed. Any nation prevented from so doing – or preventing itself – stultifies and shrinks. Home rule, in that sense, is a preventative measure, a way of ensuring that Scotland – culture, economy, politics and the rest – does not atrophy or withdraw into itself.** (SCOT080997)
>
> Scotland said Yes. The "auld sang" pronounced ended in 1707 by the last Scottish chancellor begins again. We approach the 21st century with the hope, at long last, that **Scottish life can be freed from lassitude, that the drain of talent from Scotland will be ended, that native energy and creativity will, like political power, come home**.(SCOT120997)

The newspaper is campaigning for a Yes vote, and uses the strategy of blaming Scotland's ills on Scotland's dependence, on that outside factor. Being governed by Westminster and not by a Scottish/national legislative body, is threatening Scottish identity and, more than that, it is threatening 'Scotland's survival as a nation'. And another example of situational attribution:

> But the final argument is **psychological and perhaps emotional.** The lack of national democratic institutions has grievously **sapped Scottish self-belief**. Standardising forces have eroded **the external signs of our nationhood, speech, custom and dress, and left us confused and adrift.** The deferential philosophy of dependence on English largesse attacks **the qualities of enterprise, invention and self-reliance in which we once took pride.** Dependence is in any case something of a myth, though a powerful one. There is hardly an area of Scottish life that cannot be uplifted and quickened by an Assembly. (SCOT230279)

Describing *homo Scotus* as lacking self-belief, self-reliance, invention and enterprise, as being confused and adrift, the *Scotsman* points again the finger elsewhere. It is not Scotland's fault – it is the result of the situation that Scotland unwillingly finds itself in. SNP activist Jim Sillars wrote that 'Scots have been saddled with two burdens. One, the belief that we are subsidised and poor and, the other, that we owe the English a great deal for past favours' (1986:100). The above quotation is indicative of this – Scots are dissatisfied with their state of affairs, as this dependence is bad for Scotland's psyche. But still, the dependence on the England is not attacked directly, but indirectly and subtly indicated through the negative effects it has had on Scotland. In terms of rhetorical strategies, if Scots are described in negative terms, this is

justified and explained in terms of external factors (situational bias) - all the problems in Scotland are caused by external factors. The 'philosophy of dependence', lack of 'self-belief', confused and adrift state, all can be traced back to the lack of institutions and standardising forces outwith the control of Scots themselves. This is echoed also in the following extract from the *Herald*:

> If anything, a parliament should act as a liberating effect on Scots, **raising trampled dignity** (whether correctly or not) and **removing the resentment of others telling us what to do**. (HERA290897)

The extract is from a quite self-critical editorial discussing the increasing occurrence of anti-English attacks in Scotland. It is therefore the English that have trampled the Scottish dignity, and it is the English that are telling the Scots, who are marked by personal deixis 'us', what to do that is resented – situational attribution again.

Another attempt of constructing *homo Scotus* is made by the *Scotsman*, who describe Scotland's soul-seeking:

> The handsome neo-classical lines of the old Royal High School in Edinburgh have over the years acquired layers of reek. For all the complaints about its cost, the Scottish Assembly will be an intimate parliament and the modest symbol of **a small nation hesitantly finding its soul again**. Calton Hill is a fitting place from which to begin a process of revival, renewal and change. The harmony of the old building's design speaks not **of false hope or vainglory but of rational ambition**, its exterior grime of realism. (SCOT230279)

Through metonymic use of the Royal High school (i.e. the building for people/nation), Scotland is characterised as a nation with 'rational ambition' and not full of 'false hope', i.e. the characteristics of the building are used to describe the people. The metaphor of revival, renewal and change is used again. Many of the above extracts use the transformation strategy, talking about 'remaking', 'regaining', 'restoring', 'reviving' etc in relation to certain characteristics of the Scottish nation.

Whereas negative traits of Scotland (lack of self-belief, lack of entrepreneurial spirit etc.) have been attributed to situational factors, then 'dispositional attributions (i.e., act due to something residing in the actor – internal; psychologically based) would tend to be made in reference to the home nation's positive actions/affairs' (Luther

2001:215). Indeed, even democracy can be described in essential terms, as in the following extract:

> And our religious history, in which presbyterianism imbued almost every area of life, has left us with **an ingrained belief in democratic principles.** (SCOT230279)

The belief in democratic principles is 'imbued' and 'ingrained', it is characteristic of 'us' Scots as such. Democratic principles as something that is typical to Scottish character, and not just something attributable to the surrounding political context. Whereas previously the 'dependence' on Westminster politics drained Scotland of its self-belief and sense of responsibility (situational attribution), the belief in democratic principles is internal to Scotland (dispositional attribution), and not anything that might have come from above, from years of living under the guiding hand of Westminster (which would be a situational attribution). This particular dispositional bias is another element of the so-called Scottish myth: 'Alongside the lad o'pairts stereotype sat a belief in the inherent democracy of Scottish society' (McCrone 2001a:98).

Small is beautiful? Another topic that is present often is the smallness on Scotland:

> ... the Scottish Assembly will be an intimate parliament and the modest symbol of **a small nation hesitantly finding its soul again**. (SCOT230279)
>
> Ireland is an encouraging **example of a small nation** prospering in the EEC. (SCOT110379)
>
> ... in the end of the day support for devolution depends not on calculation but on **faith and hope in the future of a small nation whose character has undergone a quickening process of erosion.** (SCOT030379)
>
> The real question – whether we still believe in the power of government to create an inclusive civic culture which can, with vision and determination, enhance **a small country's** performance and improve the lives of its people – goes on begging for an answer. (HERA200897)

The first extract uses words like 'intimate', 'small', 'modest' and 'soul' to generate a feeling of unity and consensus. The third extract also implies that Scotland is confused and in doubt, with a 'character' that is eroding. As in many places elsewhere, Scotland is anthropomorphised and attributed human traits, a 'character', a rhetorical assimilation strategy that implies 'intra-national sameness' (Wodak *et al.* 1999:44).

7.3. Discursive construction of *homo externus*

As explained in Chapter 2, identity is 'operative only dialectically, i.e. in connection with its opposite, otherness' (Therborn 1995:229). Therefore, the media constructs two identities simultaneously. In parallel to the discursive construction of *homo Scotus*, the media engage in the discursive construction of the Other(s). This process is somewhat more complex, and two aspects can be identified. First there is the element of identifying the *homo nationalis* in relation to the Other, or rhetorical strategy of differentiation and assimilation. This differentiation does not always have to be negative, as discussed earlier (see the positive/negative typology in Chapter 2). This positive/negative othering is complemented by the attempt to attribute identities to the Other. Just as the *homo nationalis* is given an identity and character though discourse, the *homo externus* is described in similar terms.

7.3.1. England and the English

> The Englishman and the Scot have long served as one another's *alter ego.*
> *Karl Miller,* Doubles

For illustration, consider the recent book *Being Scottish*, edited by Devine & Logue (2002). Although not an academic analysis, it gives a snapshot of people's definitions of Scottishness. Both in the editors' introduction, and throughout the different personal statements of Scottishness, we come across the issue of the Other. More often that not, the Other is defined as (the) English. Here are just few examples:

- 'Do contemporary Scots define themselves more or less against the English or the British?' (editors, p. xi)
- 'I do not know if this desire for independence is more marked among Scots due to the size of our country compared to our imposing big brother to the south' (Euan Baird, p. 12)
- 'Perhaps being Scottish is simply not being English' (Sheila Brock, p. 34)
- 'People all around the world love us because we are crap and we just can't see it. Second rate, second best, second fiddle, at least what we've been told. No threat to anyone and definitely NOT ENGLISH' (Owen Campbell, p. 51, original emphasis)

- 'Seven years old, steaming slowly, in an overheated classroom, white-knuckling my ruler, I discovered what shilpit, peelie-wally beasts the English were. They apparently cheated at Culloden. At everything they won, in fact' (Isla Dewar, p. 63)

As we can see, occasionally Scottish people start defining who they are by stating who they are not – the English. Often 'being Scottish is simply a device for not being English' (McCrone 2001a:149; see also McCrone *et al.* 1999:167-171). This negative othering of the English has a long pedigree. The 1320 Declaration of Arbroath is strong in its anti-English sentiments, stating that 'for as long a hundred of us remain alive, we will never on any conditions be subjected to the lordship of the English'. Of course, modernist nationalism scholars would argue against nationalist interpretations of such distant past. However,

> Although it is a much more difficult task to know what the thirteenth-century peasant made of being Scottish, the historical consensus does seem to be that at least the 'middling folk' and foot soldiers of Scotland at the time certainly made something of it. The concept of the 'community of the realm' – *communitas regni* – appears to have been a sufficiently understood concept to rally the nation against the English foe, just as there is support for the existence of 'national' consciousness in England in the Middle Ages (Greenfeld 1992). In short, the conditions for generating national awareness contra the 'other' were surely there for Scotland and England in the context of each other. (McCrone 2001a:156)

The availability of England as the Other for generating national awareness in Scotland has been deployed by various 'architects of nationalism' in Scotland, be they politicians, media, intelligentsia or other. Whether the aim is to 'defend the Scottish tradition from the threat of anglicisation' (Devine 1999:391), or to narcissistically emphasise the differences between the two national communities while they are growing more similar (McCrone 2001a:102-103), nationalism in Scotland has been conceptually opposed to England (Hearn 2000:39).

7.3.1.1. The English in Scotland

There is a considerable English community in Scotland. The 2001 census revealed that 8.1 per cent of the population in Scotland were born in England. However, in the discourse of othering the English are usually referred to as the people 'south of the

Border', as an external Other. This is, in itself fascinating - 'the English' are faceless, external, and not the 'English in Scotland'. Murray Watson writes:

> One of the most extraordinary omissions from Scottish historiography is a comprehensive and rigorous study of the impact of English-born migrants in Scotland. Paradoxically, the relationship between England and Scotland is a theme that constantly attracts the interests of historians. Yet, apart from isolated citations, English-born migrants, who form one of the largest migrant communities in Scottish history, have remained invisible from serious historical study. (2002:23)

So despite the 'clear evidence that English migration into Scotland contributed to Scottish economy and social development in the twentieth century' and already 'by 1921 the English had overtaken the Irish as the largest migrant group in Scotland' (Watson 2002:24), the immigrant English and their descendants remain the external Other and the 'English in Scotland' remain somewhat overlooked (Watson 2002; McIntosh *et al.* 2004).

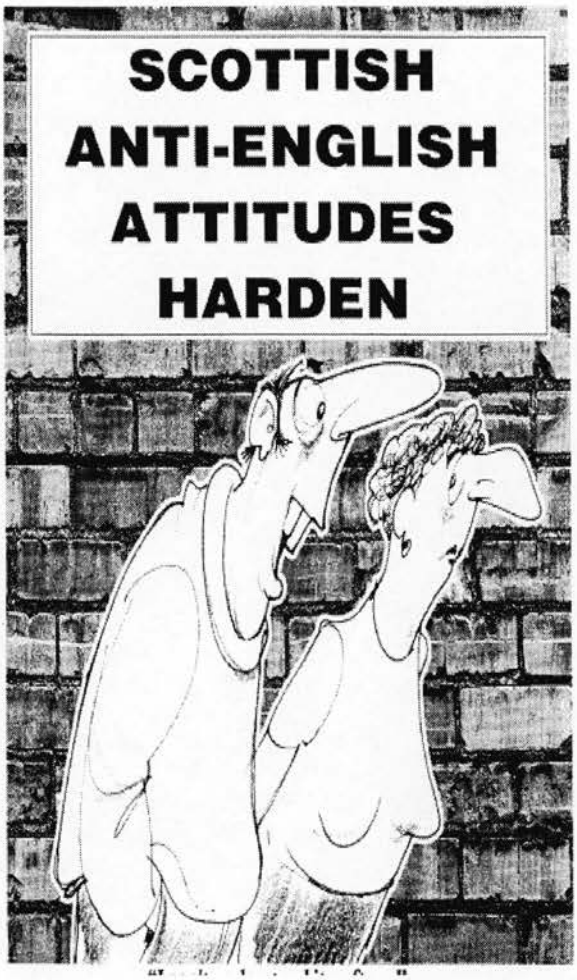
As stated, the category 'English' usually denotes the English 'south of the Border'. There were few exceptions though. The *Herald* editorial of 29th August 1997 discussed the claimed increase of anti-English racism in Scotland, accompanied by an editorial cartoon depicting an elderly English couple.

> ***Racism in Scotland: Attacks on English a disgrace***
> Racism is a hateful thing, the refuge of the ignorant and the weak-minded. It bends truth, breaks hearts and, as we show conclusively this morning, it is alive and flourishing in Scotland.
> [...]
> And so we come to the Scots, a mongrel group if ever there was one. It is not surprising that there is **some anti-English feeling in Scotland** because there is a tradition of such behaviour. Typically, **it is not found in feelings of superiority but in rage at perceived inferiority; that English people have bought our homes, taken our jobs and run our district and community councils; that Edward may have been sent home to think again but that ultimately his lot won.** Much of this sort of feeling ignores the fact that **incomers bring life, energy, and economic investment with them**. Many a resentful little community in the west or north-east of Scotland would be a good deal more impoverished today if incomers from England, or wherever, had not kept the local shop going and built their extensions and patios with local builders. There is another side to the coin. Anyone moving into an area has a duty rooted in common sense to behave with sensitivity. **Sadly, there are those with loud voices from all over Britain who are unaware that listening and learning is often more important than delivering one's own opinion.**

> It is disgraceful that racist attacks on English residents in Scotland are growing. Current events have brought politics into the issue with fears that matters will grow worse under a devolved Scottish parliament. We earnestly believe such opinions to be wrong. If anything, a parliament should act as a liberating effect on Scots, raising trampled dignity (whether correctly or not) and removing the resentment of others telling us what to do. **We should remember that hundreds of thousands of English people will vote in the referendum and that many, we hope, will serve as Members of the Scottish parliament.** Honourable Scottish politicians, and that includes the leadership of the SNP, will have no truck with anti-English behaviour. All of us must combat it energetically for it is not a problem for a few but for our community as a whole. (HERA290897)

The above extract is revealing for a number of reasons. The first paragraph is very emotional and colourful (hateful, ignorant, weak-minded, bends truth, breaks hearts). It uses a life metaphor (alive and flourishing) when talking about racism in Scotland. It then continues with a downplaying/trivialisation strategy by stating that 'there is *some* anti-English feeling in Scotland', and consequently the majority of the Scots are not anti-English. The statement that typically anti-Englishness 'is not found in feelings of superiority but in rage at perceived inferiority,' can be interpreted as justification strategy. More specifically, a strategy of scapegoating or victim-perpetrator inversion is used to show that Scots do not consider themselves superior (which would be considered arrogant), but dislike the English *because* the Scots *perceive* themselves inferior to the English (in which case the dislike of English is justified, using a strategy of situational attribution). One can trace a weak sense of national identity here – implying that strong, confident Scots would not be racist. The English have brought on this dislike themselves: they have been 'trampling' the Scottish dignity and have been telling 'us', i.e. the Scots, what to do, which is resented by the Scots. Although the English are not named in the 'Anyone moving into an area has a duty rooted in common sense to behave with sensitivity' context, it is hinted that the English have been insensitive and have not followed common sense. Again, the strategy of victim-perpetrator inversion is used.[35]

[35] The second paragraph also contains a negative othering of the Highlands: 'many a resentful little community in the west or north-east of Scotland'.



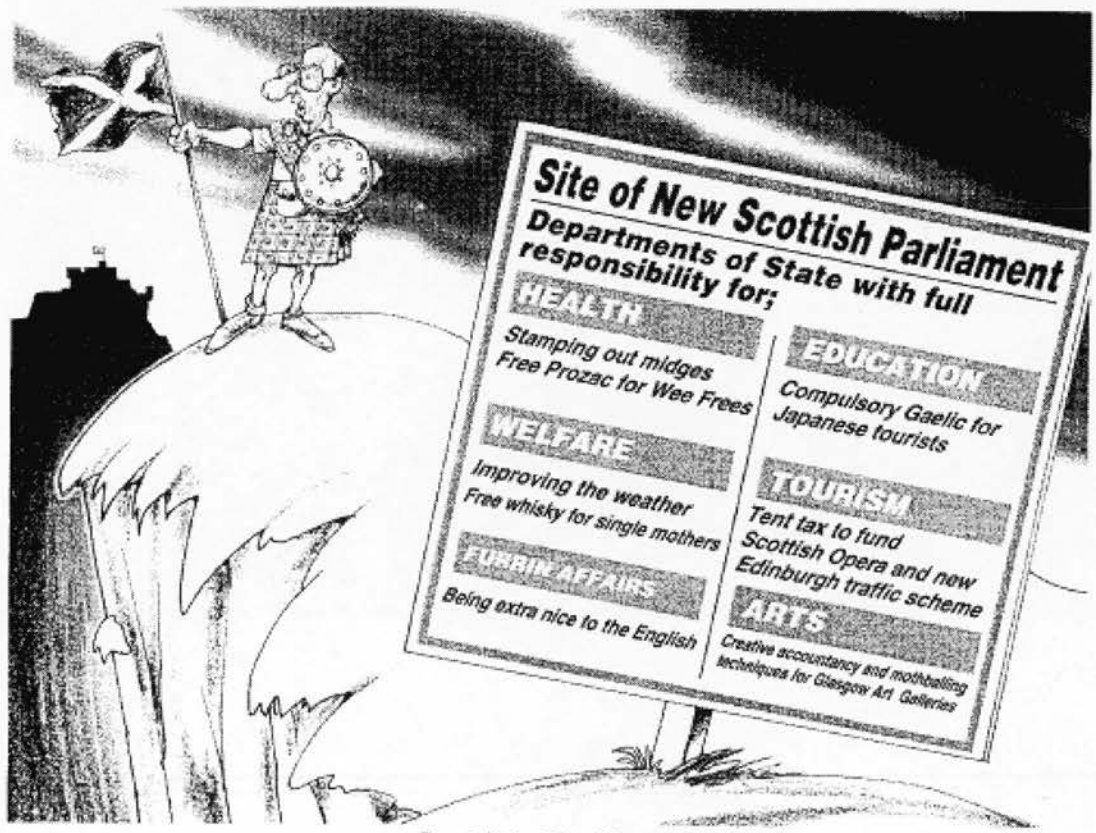
Cartoon 51. Caption: 'I can't understand it … after all we've done for them.' Published in the *Herald* on 29 August 1997

Also, the use of the ironic cartoon next the leader article above undermines the leader article. Together with the cartoon, 'the English' are shown as ignorant and stupid, and the blame is laid with the English. Although this is done in the article in a more implicit way, the ironic depiction of the ignorant older English couple on the cartoon makes this 'hidden' message more explicit and clear.

Here is another instance of discussing the English in Scotland, this time from the *Scotsman*:

> Several answers can be offered. One is that Scottish talent has long drained southwards. An Edinburgh parliament might be a step towards reversing the trend. Secondly, it is the simple truth that **an increasing number of English people are choosing to live and work in Scotland. We have assets they recognise, in other words, and these can and should be developed.** (SCOT090997)

It is worth noting here, how the English, although (thinking of) living in Scotland, are still contrasted to the Scottish 'us': '*We* have assets *they* recognise,' states the leader article. Generally, though, when the English are mentioned in the media, it is in relation to the English in England, not in Scotland. Above examples are exceptional and not the norm. Even on the following cartoon, 'being extra nice to the English' is again, part of foreign or 'furrin' affairs:



Cartoon 74. Published in the *Herald* on 13 September 1997

7.3.1.2. England / The English in England

The English are othered in many different ways in the media discourse. Sometimes they are singled out as the source of all evil. Sometimes they are used in a neutral (at least explicitly) comparison. And on rare occasions, the English are used as a positive reference point. The English and England are used interchangeably in the media and in this thesis. Firstly, it is sometimes difficult to distinguish between them in the media discourse, and secondly, one is often used metonymically to mean the other, i.e. often 'England' is used to mean the people of England, and *vice versa*.

To start with, here are the references to the **positive** English Other. Here are two extracts that situate Scotland and England in the Union:

> **The Union** was a political work of genius, which for more than 250 years has conferred incalculable benefits on both **Scotland and England**. Scotland especially benefited. (HERA260279)

England is used as an equal Other, a partner in the Union. The extract emphasises the benefits of the Union, especially to Scotland, and the next extract is in many ways similar:

> Let us take as a premise that it is desirable to sustain the unity of the United Kingdom. Indeed, **our close and cousinly links with the English, our affection for them** and **respect for their culture**, the degree of **domestic, social and economic intercourse between us** - these facts make separatism (a pejorative word for independence) unthinkable. (SCOT230279)

Note that it is the *intercourse* between the Scots and English that is the focus of attention. It is not the English as such that are positive, but the relationship between 'us', the Scots, and 'them', the English. It is Scotland, who does all the positive actions – it is emphasised that Scotland feels affection and has respect for them, the English – fitting neatly into the scheme of positive ingroup description. Note that the leader writer uses the term 'English' here – and not England. The first is a collective and implicitly national body of people, the second a more neutral geographical reference. A powerful family metaphor is used to imply homogeneity between the two nations. Scotland and England are cousins. Reicher and Hopkins (2001:96) write family metaphors are popular and widely used in describing the relations between Scotland and England, especially by the unionists.

Secondly, the English are used in the discursive construction of Scottishness as the **negative** Other. The media try 'to show how they sustain a dialectic which configures to present Scotland as a separate nation, and, crucially, quite unlike its southern neighbour' (McCrone 2001a:80). This is done through the negative othering of the English. The following extract starts by negative othering, then throws in a small compliment to *some* English, before continuing with negative description of 'the English' again:

All of this presents real problems to those campaigning on both sides but, despite the blood-curdling threats of the disintegration of the United Kingdom and **the quite stunning displays of ignorance by some English commentators, who misunderstood the entire devolution issue to the extent that they were happy to describe devolution as splitting Scotland from England**, the Scottish experience has been a happy one. This applies not just to the result but also to **the relationship with England which has been amicable and beneficial to both nations. The English, by and large, have shown great maturity and sense about the issue of devolution in Scotland** and now in Wales. **Hopefully it will lead them to explore more meaningful and fruitful methods of government for themselves. They, and we**, will undertake this task as part of a United Kingdom where the constituent nations contribute equitably and **control their own essential national functions**. That is the way of the future, here, in Wales, and hopefully in England. (HERA160997)

Firstly, note again that it is the *relationship* between England and Scotland that has been amicable and beneficial, i.e. Scotland has contributed to that, as relationship always has two sides to it. Thus while complimenting the English, Scotland is also complimenting itself. Secondly, mitigation strategy is used in stating that it is only some English (*by and large*) who have shown maturity and sense in regards to devolution. Thus it is by no means *all* English that have acted in such positive way. Again, the positive properties of the outgroup are mitigated and downplayed as part of the polarisation strategy. And thirdly, although referring to England in the context of an amicable and beneficial relationship, the extract is still clearly othering the latter – contrasting the Scottish 'we' to the English 'them'

Of course, one can argue that the above extract refers to the minority. Indeed, the beginning of the extract does so explicitly. What an average reader of the above editorial will remember later cannot be known, but it is not unreasonable to suggest that all he or she could recall is that the English are ignorant about the real nature of devolution in Scotland. This statement is followed by one of the rare complimentary descriptions of the English (discussed on the previous page). However, the tone of that extract is rather patronising. It is only *some* English who have climbed above their more typical (?) childish behaviour and shown 'maturity and sense' – again, mitigation is used as a means of strategy of polarisation. The Scots 'hope' that the English will learn from 'us' (i.e. Scots) and inspired by the Scots will go and 'explore more meaningful and fruitful methods of government'. Although the editorial nods

approvingly towards the few mature English that understand devolution, the tone of the article leads to speculation that this might be just out of politeness of the *Herald* leader writer. Of course, the suggestion that devolved Scotland should be the green light for constitutional reform in England is not rare, and this *topos* will be discussed later.

While being negatively othered in the media, the English are sometimes (unduly) blamed for the ills of Westminster. Technically, of course, Westminster is a UK institution, and not English[36]. But there are a number of examples that can be described as so-called mixed-proxy cases. In a leader article *Agenda for Assembly*: *Educational stimulus*, the differences between Scotland and England, as represented in their different educational systems, are systematically evoked. The transformation strategy is used in the editorial in order to emphasise the uniqueness of Scotland (assimilation strategy), and the difference of England (dissimilation strategy). Furthermore, England is construed as a threat, as a reason behind the current problems in Scotland:

> Scotland has its own educational system. But the important decisions (school-leaving age, comprehensive structure, etc.) are taken elsewhere, and **pressure for assimilation with the larger English system is a pervasive force**. (SCOT080279)

In a similar vein to the "Scottish ≠ Conservative = English" equation (discussed later), 'Westminster' is described as English. The reliance on external 'elsewhere' is criticised, and the used of 'pressure for assimilation' indicates an element of aggression here. The leader article informs about and warns against English heteronomy. The Scottish education system is used as a particularising synecdoche, i.e. as part for whole (*pars pro toto*) (Wodak *et al.* 1999:44). Although the leader article mentions only the Scottish education system in referring to the fact that Scotland cannot take any significant decisions in that particular area of decision-making, as these are taken 'elsewhere', i.e. in England; the assumption behind the article is that 'the assimilation with the larger English system is a pervasive force' is a metaphor that represents other areas of Scottish everyday life as well. Scotland needs its own assembly in order to escape this assimilation. The next extract is similar:

[36] The Westminster Other is described later in the context of the British Other.

> The propagandists who make the most noise about the Scotland Act's unfairness to **the English** [...] are not usually to be found complaining about the all-round unfairness which **their precious electoral system** inflicts upon voters throughout Britain. (SCOT050279)

As it is the English propagandists who 'make the most noise' about the unfair proposed legislation, it is also 'them' whose 'precious electoral system' inflicts unfairness on the Scots (note the ironic use of 'precious'). The following extract is also critical of the English politicians:

> Far too much has been made of the West Lothian question. The idea of Scots MPs decisively affecting English questions should not unduly surprise a Parliament which for years **has loaded Scottish committees with English MPs (who regard this task as a Parliamentary Siberia)** so that they reflect the composition of the whole House. (SCOT230279)

The use of verb 'loaded' is revealing, because of its negative connotations. The claim that English MPs have regarded discussing Scottish issues 'as a Parliamentary Siberia' implies just how remote and unwelcome this must have seemed to the English MPs. The implication is that the English MPs did not care and were not interested in Scottish issues, but routinely affected them 'decisively'.

And last, but not least, let us look at the **neutral** comparisons. Although the English in those occasions are neither positively or negatively othered, they are used as the Other nevertheless. This is probably the most common use of the Other. Subtly and banally, the media suggest that these comparisons between Scotland and England are important. Those banal references to England imply that it is important to show where Scotland stands in relation to England, and how these two compare. Here are few examples:

> Housing is a pivotal issue in Scottish politics. Last year 54 per cent of homes were rented in the public sector, **compared with** 32 per cent in the United Kingdom and **30 per cent in England**. (SCOT140279)
>
> Its population of prisoners is too high; **overcrowding is not as bad as in England** and is believed by officials to be not yet acute except in one or two prisons, but has been described by the staff association as "diabolical". (SCOT160279)

> The future of the Health Service has been engaging the attention of a Royal Commission, and the major parties seem committed to a further reorganisation in England. **It may be said, without complacency, that the structure of the Health Service in Scotland is simpler and better and not obviously in need of another shake-up**. (SCOT130279)

Above extracts are similar to some of the extracts about Wales (discussed later). England is used as a reference point to show Scotland itself in a more positive light (especially in the last two extracts). The following extract compares Scotland and England, but as Scotland comes out slightly worse in the comparison (its health expenditure is higher), then a justifying clause is used:

> Health expenditure is higher per head in Scotland than England, but this merely reflects greater need and a higher incidence of illnesses and not specially **benevolent treatment by Westminster**. (SCOT130279)

To avoid showing Westminster in a positive light, the article uses mitigation strategy by casting doubt on the benevolent nature of Westminster treatment. Discussion about Scots law is also tied up with the Self/Other dialectic:

> Like a noble but gruesomely tattered old plaid the fabric of Scots law has grown threadbare over the last 270 years. Holes gape in areas of social concern which Stair never thought of. Discordant patches show where **London legislation** - on contract and obligation, for instance - has been stitched into a roughly Scottish form.
> [...]
> This is an ambitious programme. But we are now at a turning-point, where either Scots law is rescued and modernised or the case for simply abandoning it and going over to **the English pattern** becomes difficult to rebut. (SCOT120279)

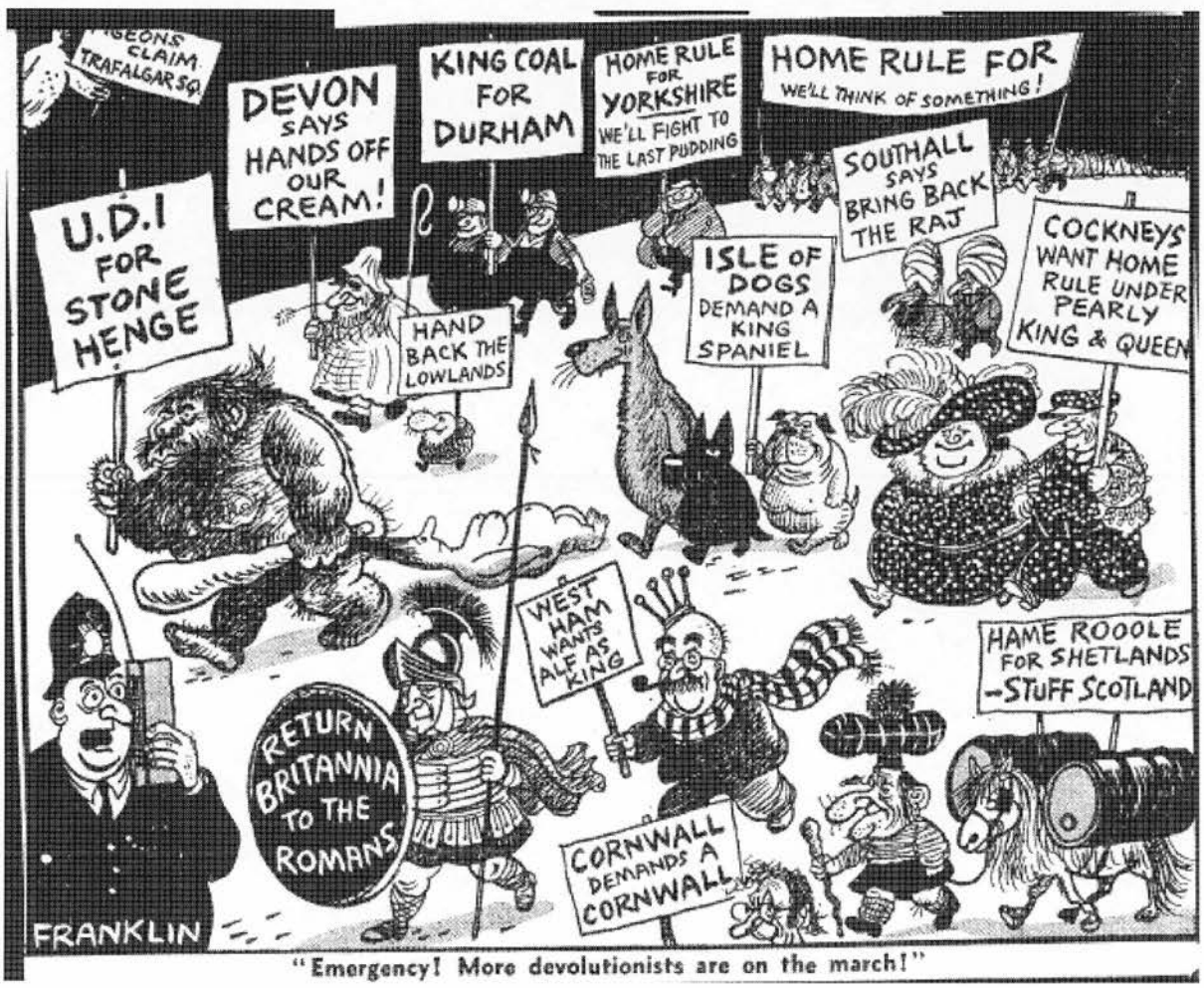
Later in the chapter, the concept of 'wandering we' is discussed. Here it is interesting to note again, how the proxies of England and 'London' are used interchangeably in the above extract. First the article complains about the effects of London legislation on Scots law, but then continues with the criticism of the negative effect of the 'English pattern' on the fabric of Scots law.

The next extract tries to conceptualise the 'right' kind of devolution:

> If a sense of nationhood was a strong component in the Scottish decision, and if a lack of that particular sense was an element in the wobbly Welsh decision, **what on earth** will be the catalyst, the defining element in the push by some of the English regions for a form of devolution of their own? **Obviously there cannot be a London or a north-east nationhood.** Are we being too sniffy in

wondering whether a conglomeration of purely economic reasons is sufficient for **a degree of devolution which is in any way meaningful**? Perhaps we are. Everyone must find his or her own way to proper constitutional reform. (HERA200997)

The 'what on earth' in the first half of the extract is casting serious doubt on the ability of England on the whole, or some English regions, to attain some form of devolution. The chances of devolution happening in England are deemed to be very unlikely, and the leader article simply cannot see any devolution coming from anywhere (with)in England. Hence the above extract is suggesting that the only meaningful reason for devolution is national, i.e. like in Scotland. Purely economic or any other non-national conglomeration is possibly not good enough.



Cartoon 145. Published in *The Sun* on 27 November 1975

Again, the next extract does not distinguish between the English influence and Westminster influence:

> **The deferential philosophy of dependence on English largesse** attacks the qualities of enterprise, invention and self-reliance in which we once took pride. Dependence is in any case something of a myth, though a powerful one. (SCOT230279)

Although it is the English largesse that is seen as dangerous to the Scots character, it is Westminster that the extract is really talking about.

But of course, manifestly 'neutral' and banal references to England are not always as innocent. For example, there were a number of articles hinting that the English, too, should reform their way of government.

> If the Assembly casts new light on some obscure but important areas of Scottish affairs, it will do Scotland a service and **perhaps also inspire the English to look for reform of their own system of government.** (SCOT050279)
>
> But might not **the English themselves be gratified to get a measure of Home Rule as a result of Scottish devolution**? And **might not their appetite for constitutional change be whetted**? (SCOT220279)
>
> It means regaining responsibility for matters which a mature people ordinarily decide for themselves, whilst co-operating **with our neighbours** in common concerns. Devolution is part of a wider movement against centralisation working elsewhere in Europe and **which may eventually affect English region**s. (SCOT010379)
>
> But we trust the Welsh will be similarly bold and decisive in their referendum, endorsing Mr Blair's determination to scrap big government. If they do so, **the English regions might follow**. (HERA130997)

All above extracts suggest that the English need to reform their own system of government. The 'perhaps' the first extract is curious – it almost casts doubt on the ability of the English to recognise the (obvious) need for reform. Although the English and their 'perhaps inspiration' for constitutional reform are mentioned only in passing, the sentence is more loaded than is obvious maybe in the first place.

7.3.1.3. The 'English' Conservatives

I discuss the Conservatives as a sub-category of the English Other. Part of the negative othering of the Tories is due to the fact that the Scots see themselves as 'moderately more left-wing than those in the rest of Britain as a whole' (Hearn 2000:3). The Tories are claimed to be inherently alien to the Scots. For example, the Scottish novelist William McIlvanney in his 1994 speech 'invokes a national identity historically rooted in egalitarian values, and opposed ... to the values of the Conservative Party and the unbridled free market' (Hearn 2000:1). National identity and political values are connected, writes McCrone, and 'to say that one is Scottish is to say that one has left-of-centre values' (2001a:27,114). Consequently, right-of-centre views are associated with being English. Although the 'national political values' of the Scots may not be so different from the Welsh and northern England, 'these values in Scotland have become closely associated with national identity' (Hearn 2000:3). As a result, anything or anyone who opposes those 'Scottish political values' becomes a negative Other. As McCrone writes,

> the Conservatives in Scotland in the 1980s were genuinely perplexed that they had failed to mobilise what they saw *as 'Scottish' values of thrift, hard work and enterprise*. Their problem was that the Thatcherite project was largely *perceived as an alien, an English, political creed, north of the border, and not an expression of indigenous Scottish values*. (2001a:51)

The above quotation (my emphasis) shows the curious equalising of Englishness and Conservatism. Eric Hobsbawm explained this by saying that 'the proxies had got mixed up, that being 'English' and 'Conservative' had somehow become entangled' (McCrone 2001a:149), as is hinted in the next two leader article extracts. Both the extracts are from 1997 devolution referendum, and are both referring to the (Scottish) Conservatives as the 'English' party:

> BARONESS Thatcher has better reason than most to understand why home rule is an issue. She it was who destroyed the Tories' rational attachment to devolution when she assumed the party leadership. She it was, as prime minister, who did more **to alienate Scotland from Westminster** government than any other prime minister. In the end, indeed, **Thatcherism induced many Scots to believe the Conservatives were simply an 'English' party.** (SCOT090997)
>
> However, the slide towards separation will become inexorable unless one significant group of people gets its act together quickly. This group is the Scottish Tories. **They** have a vitally important role to play in this **new game of ours.** It is difficult to believe that they will remain in such close association

with **the party which shares their name in England** and it surely cannot be much longer before they accept that devolution for Scotland must mean that as a party they, too, must start thinking for themselves.
The referendum result gives them the opportunity to shake off the tag they have borne so long as **'the English party'** and offers them the chance to play a real role in the public life of this country. The preservation of the Union, the retention of the links with the rest of the United Kingdom, the rejection of the spurious claims of the nationalists, will all give them a new credo for playing a full and active part in the new parliament.
However, to do it they must make themselves an identifiably Scottish party. They must kick out their present leadership and seek to galvanise a mass membership by offering genuine democratic structures. The leader of the Scottish Conservatives, or whatever they call themselves, must be elected on the basis of one member, one vote. They must consult their members widely in the formulation of policy. That way they will attract the calibre of person who can make the necessary contribution to the maintenance of the Union and the effective working of the parliament. (SCOT150997)

If we look at the use of personal deixis 'we' in the last extract, the Scottish Tories, however Scottish, are still 'they'. 'They' have to learn how to take part in this 'new game of ours'. Although the Scottish Tories are geographically located in Scotland, they are still not really 'Scottish', and definitely remain too tarnished with being 'English'. Of course, the Conservatives are not without supporters in Scotland. Even at the 1997 General Election, when the Tories failed to return a single Scottish MP to Westminster, they did gain almost one fifth of the votes in Scotland (Brown *et al.* 1998:154). The *Scotsman* commented on this 'dogged' support to the Tories day before the 1997 referendum:

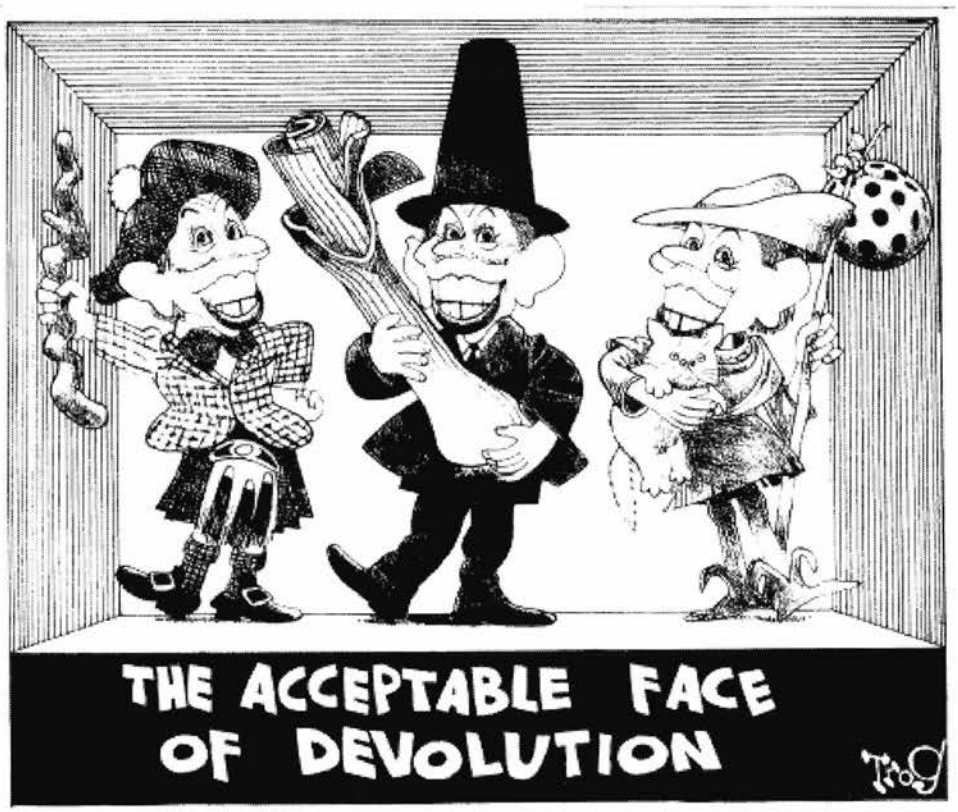
If, like us, you favour a double 'Yes' this might not seem to matter. If you also favour a parliament representing all of Scotland, however, this Tory collapse is troubling. **Do these inept remnants seriously propose to represent the one in five voters who remain doggedly loyal to Conservatism?** If so, they have betrayed that support by their incompetence. If not, the 'No' campaign has been the last feeble throw in a game that was lost from the start. (SCOT100997)

At the first elections to the new Scottish Parliament in 1999, the Tories gained 17.5 per cent of the vote and 16 list MSPs. At the second elections in 2003, the Tories' share of votes was 16.5 per cent, and they currently have 18 MSPs at Holyrood, including one constituency MSP (David McLetchie, Edinburgh Pentlands). However, for the purposes of discursive construction of Scottishness, the Tories are an alien, a negative internal Other, even when talking about the Scottish Tories.

7.3.2. Wales

Wales is an interesting case in the Scottish media. Although both Wales and Scotland held devolution referenda in 1979 and 1997, there were just a few references to Wales in Scottish national broadsheets in 1979. On one occasion the Welsh icon of leek was referred to in the context of negative othering of the European Economic Community:

> The EEC is undoubtedly an object of popular hostility, a fact to which the Brussels bureaucrats insensitively contribute with **inane attempts to apply common standards exclusive of such inoffensive national symbols as the Welsh leek.** (SCOT100379)



Cartoon 192. Published in the *Sunday Telegraph* on 15 November 1998

The other two references to Wales were from the post-referendum period and mentioned health problems of some Welsh quarrymen (SCOT230379; SCOT240379) and how that might influence the way the Welsh MPs vote at the looming vote of no confidence in Westminster. One cartoon in a British Conservative broadsheet depicted a Welsh nationalist (on the right), a Scots nationalist (on the left, wearing a kilt) and Michael Foot (in the middle) stirring the devolution pot. The image of three witches creating trouble aims to warn the readers about the dangers related to devolution in Scotland and Wales:



Cartoon 16. Caption: 'Double, double toil and trouble; Fire burn, and cauldron bubble'. Published in *Daily Telegraph* on 27 February 1979

Overall, the references to Wales in 1979 are few. In 1997, Wales figures slightly more often in the Scottish media. Three discursive strands can be identified in relation to Wales. I call them the non-Other, Celtic sibling and Weak Wales.

The non-Other

There are instances where one could expect references to Wales, but they did not happen. To say it bluntly, Wales is the non-Other, a non-entity. The 'nothingness' of Wales can be seen in the following two extracts, for example:

> The Assembly is the first stage in **the journey towards a place for Scotland in the modern world,** a small country living in close intercourse with its cousin England; and it is a step from which we must not shrink. (SCOT230279)
>
> **What other nation** has its own legal system but cannot make its own laws? **What other people** is **so conscious of its identity** and yet cannot express identity through its political institutions? [...] [Scotland is] one nation in partnership with its neighbour, sharing much, but a nation nevertheless. (SCOT080997)

Note how according to above extracts, Scotland lives in partnership with one Other only. Sometimes the media suggest that the residual part of the UK, if you take out Scotland, is England. In the first extract, a family metaphor of the cousin is used, and the only cousin that Scotland has is England. The second extract implies that Scotland only has one neighbour, England. Of course, Scotland does not share land border with Wales, and Wales' role in the Union differs. But both Scotland and Wales were campaigning for devolution and one could expect more 'sympathy' towards Wales from Scotland. The invisibility of Wales in the Scottish media discourse is noticeable, especially in comparison to England.

Celtic sibling

Here Wales is used as neutral reference point. The message is that devolution is happening in Scotland, and it is happening in Wales.

> Devolution is, or is supposed to be, a flagship policy. Neither is it exclusively Scottish, for the Welsh will have their assembly ... (HERA280897)

This is a neutral extract, which draws readers' attention to the fact that Scotland is not the only place where devolution is happening, as the Welsh are preparing for a referendum as well. The next extract is also of the neutral kind:

> *The Welsh split*
> The people of Wales are **next in line** to face up to the responsibilities of taking part in the constitutional improvement of the United Kingdom. Whether they will embrace the opportunity of gaining an executive assembly **is obviously unknowable at the moment**. We will understand some of the processes at work in Wales better this morning when it will be possible to analyse a major opinion poll taken in the aftermath of the double-yes vote in Scotland. Those in Wales who object to the formation of the executive assembly clearly expect that there will be a knock-on effect from the events of last Thursday **but, just as the constitutional changes proposed for Wales are different from those in Scotland, a number of the attitudes involved are also different.** (HERA160997)

However, the headline (*The Welsh split*) sets the tone in the beginning, indicating that the Welsh are not as unanimous in facing up to the responsibilities. This is done in opposition to Scots, who have already faced up to such responsibilities of improving the United Kingdom. The last sentence, especially, is casting doubt on the ability of the Welsh to face devolution with similar enthusiasm as the Scots did just few days earlier. This takes us to the next *topos* – that of the weak Wales.

Weak Wales versus Strong Scotland

Finally, there is Wales as the negative Other that is smartly used to 'hype up' Scotland, to show Scotland in better light. By drawing the reader's attention to the weakness of the Welsh, the strengths of Scotland can be highlighted. For example:

> But **we trust the Welsh will be similarly bold and decisive in their referendum**, endorsing Mr Blair's determination to scrap big government. (HERA130997)

By stating what 'we' [the *Herald*, the Scots?] expect from the Welsh, the editorial is stating that Scots have been bold and decisive in their referendum. Although the extract is not negative towards the Welsh, the tone is very patronising (''we' trust'). The following three extracts do the same, but in a less subtle way. They clearly describe the Scots in a positive light, and then doubt whether the Welsh can live up to it:

> Despite that, the vote in **Scotland showed a heartening level of agreement right across the country. It is unlikely that the same can be said about Wales** because there is a very evident split between the poorer north and more affluent and Anglicised south. (HERA160997)
>
> **The concept of the settled will of the people** may surely be applied to constitutional reform in Scotland with confidence. **In Wales it seems it requires a good deal of bolstering and determined tweaking if it is to be used at all.** (HERA200997)
>
> **Wales seems to lack both the sense of identity and the appetite for such a project.** Labour's apparent belief that devolved **power can be offered around to anyone who might be persuaded to want it** thus no longer seems tenable. (SCOT200997)

According to the first extract, the Scots showed 'a heartening level of agreement right across the country'. The editorial continues by stating that this is something the Welsh are unlikely to do. The second extract confidently states that the '*settled* will of the people' in Scotland was expressed on September 11th. Wales does not qualify though – similar statement in Wales would need 'a good deal of bolstering and determined tweaking.' And maybe, the newspaper ponders, even tickling the Dragon's belly is not enough?



Cartoon 115. Published in *The Times* on 23 July 1997

The Welsh are simply not as good as the Scots, at least in regard to devolution. And this comes as no surprise:

> The restricted powers for Wales were cast in the way they were because **nobody believed that there was a strong demand for significant political muscle** or **the existence of anything approaching a sense of nationhood**. It may be harsh to describe that as a self-fulfilling prophesy but it begins to look that way.
> [...]
> If a sense of nationhood was a strong component in the Scottish decision, and if **a lack of that particular sense** was an element in **the wobbly Welsh decision** (HERA200997)

The Welsh have no sense of nationhood (not even a weak one, not even approaching such a sense), there was no political muscle to flex on the referendum day in Wales. The non-nationness of Wales is emphasised by the *Scotsman* as well in an extract using transformation strategy:

> there is **a difference between a nation and a principality**. It is now **established beyond doubt that Scotland and Wales are different cases**. The point of home rule here was **to enable Scotland as a nation** to fit more easily within the United Kingdom. **Wales seems to lack both the sense of identity and the appetite for such a project**. (SCOT200997)

The cruel judgement after the poor turnout and indecisive referendum in Wales is that Wales simply is not a nation, at least not in the way as Scotland is. Wales is only a

principality, and the latter has no national basis to it[37]. The extract almost denies the multinational character of the United Kingdom, apart from England and Scotland, that is. United Kingdom is bi-national, and the other constituent parts are not national. Indeed – the *Herald* wrote few days earlier that

> the Scottish experience has been a happy one. This applies not just to the result but also to the relationship with England which has been amicable and beneficial to both nations. [...] They, and we, will undertake this task as part of a United Kingdom where the constituent nations contribute equitably and control their own essential national functions. (HERA160997)

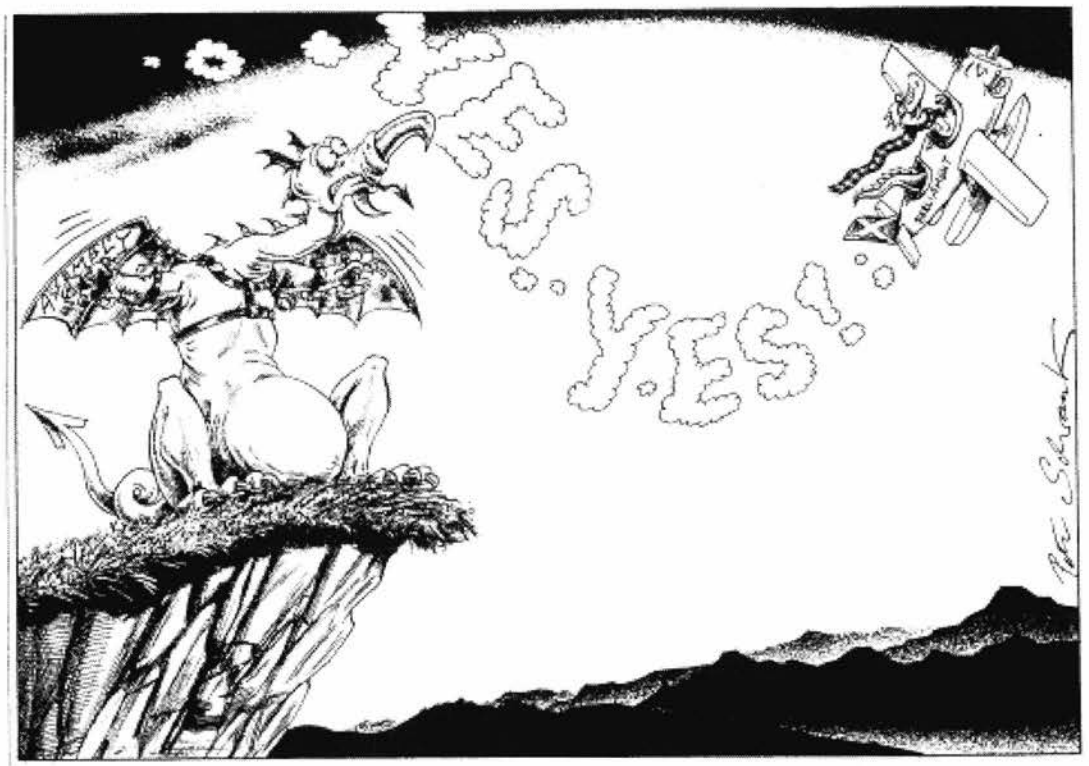
The following extract begins with a paragraph that could have been copied verbatim from many an editorial in 1979. But no reference to the 1979 devolution referendum in Scotland is made there. The 1979 controversial devolution campaign in Scotland had been replaced with almost consensual campaign in 1997. And the controversial 1979 campaign was all but forgotten. Thus a similar situation in Scottish history is mitigated, whereas the Welsh one is highlighted and flagged up constantly.

> Matters are complicated by the no campaign in Wales which sends out contradictory messages, damning the prospective assembly on the one hand as a toothless creation and on the other as likely to hold sufficient powers to lead to the break-up of the United Kingdom.
> The no campaign cannot have it both ways and its temper has not been improved by the possibility that Scotland's resounding approval will affect matters in Wales. The intriguing factor in all of this is the proximity on many levels other than the simply geographical between Wales and England. **We are dealing in generalisations here, and that is always dangerous, but there does not seem to be the same sense of nationhood in Wales as in Scotland, despite the fact that the Welsh language is far more widespread and Welsh culture is strong and thriving**. (HERA160997)

After establishing the unmistaken unanimity of referendum result in Scotland, the end of the extract is fascinating. It rightly suggests that language and culture do not make a nation. Although Welsh language is more widespread and Welsh culture strong and thriving [and in Scotland Gaelic is marginal], there is not a similar sense of nationhood in Wales as there is in Scotland. What makes it interesting though is the way how the Scottish newspaper feels it has the right to put down the Welsh feeling of nationhood. The rhetorical strategy used is characteristic of the so-called racist discourse. The *Herald* knows it is dangerous to generalise, and in normal

[37] The BBC guide *The Changing UK* from March 1999 states that BBC 'should never say the Principality when we mean Wales (except of course when talking about the Prince of Wales'). The Scottish newspapers have not adopted such guidelines apparently.

circumstances the leader writers probably would not generalise, but here, in Welsh case, it seems justified.



Cartoon 79. Published in *Independent on Sunday* on 14 September 1997.
The cartoon juxtaposes a happily flying Nessie (representing Scotland, wearing a tartan scarf and waving a Saltire in a plane signed 'Parliament') to the sad-looking dragon (representing Wales) – whose Assembly-inscribed wings simply aren't strong enough.

As said before, all above extracts are rather patronising in their language. 'We hope' and 'we trust' the Welsh will do the same [as us, the Scots]. In a situation, where one would expect a constructive strategy of emphasising similarity (à la the Scots and Welsh are in the same boat), the strategy of dissimilation prevails in Scottish broadsheets, as far as Wales is concerned.

Ideologically speaking, these last extracts use once more the strategy of polarisation, i.e. the strategy of positive self-presentation and negative other-presentation. Wales is constantly and consistently downgraded, in order to emphasise the positive aspects of Scotland. As van Dijk says, 'the rhetoric of alliteration; parallelism, or other forms of repetition serves not only to emphasise negative properties of the Others, but also to underline the good qualities of Our people' (1993:264). Parallels are drawn to Wales, and developments in Wales and Scotland are compared, in order to underline the good qualities of Scotland, and the negative qualities of Wales.

7.3.3. Irish/Ireland

Historically, the **Irish migrants in Scotland** have functioned as a negative internal Other. A number of Irish migrants arrived in Scotland in late nineteenth and early twentieth century. As mentioned in Chapter 2, the immigrants often end up as the negative Other, *against whom* the identity of a nation is constructed. Hjerm says 'it is even difficult to see how "others" or immigrants ... could ever be viewed in non-derogatory way' (Hjerm 1998:5.2). This was the fate of the Irish immigrants, especially the Irish Catholics, in their early days in Scotland:

> The arrival of the Irish exacerbated pressure among a developing urban proletariat already facing the social dislocations of rapid modernisation, and Catholic Irish labour was, on occasion, used by employers to depress local wage levels. These Catholic Irish were often seen as more than simply economic rivals: many viewed them as a root cause of many social evils. Integration would have been difficult enough, given the differences in speech, custom and religion which divided them from their new neighbours. (McCrone 2001a:13)

Although not all Irish immigrants were Catholics, the Catholic Irish were more 'visible,' and thus provided an easier object of othering in the tough economic and social climate of 1920s and 1930s. This negative othering was occasionally almost institutionalised, as when the Scottish Presbyterian churches campaigned explicitly against the Irish:

> At a more sinister level, between 1922 and 1938 the Presbyterian Churches mounted a systematic campaign against Irish immigrants and Roman Catholics of Irish descent, whom they saw as driving down wages, taking employment from native Scots and also a major cause of criminality and intemperance. (Devine 1999:383)

Reverend Duncan Cameron even claimed in late 1920s that 'the Scoto-Irish were an even more dangerous enemy of the Scots than had been the German Empire in the Great War!' The 1920s campaign attempting to make the Catholic Irish scapegoats was unsuccessful (Devine 1999:384), and the negative othering of Scoto-Irish has since receded. There was no evidence of the Scoto-Irish as negative Other in the Scottish media discourse in 1979 or 1997. **Ireland** however, does function as an external Other for Scotland, and a positive one at that. Ireland and Scotland both campaigned for Home Rule at the end of the nineteenth century, and Ireland gained Home Rule in 1922. The Irish Home Rule and consequent independence are often referred to in discussions about devolution in Scotland. For example:

> Four generations of Scots have debated devolution or Home Rule. In 1879 the debate concerned the need for a Minister for Scottish Affairs, and eventually, in 1885, the post of Secretary of State for Scotland was created. Since then, although Scottish Home Rule Bills always fell by the wayside until 1978, and **the tragic mishandling of Irish Home Rule** helped to delay Scottish Home Rule for more than half a century, there has been a great deal of development of devolution in the administrative sense. But it falls to the present generation of Scottish voters to inaugurate political devolution. (SCOT050279)
>
> The postponement, avoidance and side-stepping of Scottish political devolution have a long history. Liberal Governments between 1885 and 1914 reasonably suggested that Scottish Home Rule should await the settlement of the more pressing problem of **Irish Home Rule** - failing to anticipate that there would be a World War, **a loss of Irish patience** and no more Liberal Governments. (SCOT220279)

The first extract, in addition to using Irish Home Rule as a marker, a historically expanded 'we' is created. Four generations of Scots are linked to the present generation of Scots.

Here is a reference to Ireland as an example of positive system of government, as opposed to the negative and unwelcome Westminster system of government.

> Whether it will make the most of it remains to be seen, but the assembly will have an opportunity to learn not merely from the Westminster system of government, which nowadays tends to be highly regarded only by the narrowest of its own inhabitants, but from all the other systems from Scandinavia to **Ireland** to North America. (SCOT050279)

The above extract is showing Self/Other dialectic in action, e.g. how a negative othering of Westminster happens in conjunction with a positive othering of Ireland, Scandinavia and North America. In the context of the EEC/EU, Ireland is the positive Other, at least for the Scottish Nationalists:

> If Mr Callaghan plays the European card, he could find himself trumped by the Tories, and by the SNP, for whom **Ireland is an encouraging example of a small nation prospering in the EEC.** (SCOT100379)

Ireland is brought as an example of successful and independent small nation independence in Europe – echoing a similar campaign by the SNP. If Ireland can prosper in the European Community, then so can Scotland. If Ireland can thrive as a small independent nation, then so can Scotland. Again, the *topos* of a small nation is

raised here. And finally, here is another extract showing the relevance of Ireland for the Scots:

> Indeed we could argue, if our purpose was contention, that these are the two principal symptoms of the malaise which a parliament should cure: a culture grown too frightened of taking risks; a people grown too practised at spectating during the exercise of power. Why should the Scots be any less responsible, any less able to govern than the Danes or the Irish? (SOS070997)

Again, the small Scottish nation is shown to be equal to the Danes and the Irish, and thus just as deserving of devolution and self-government, as the Danes and Irish.

7.3.4. *Homo Britannicus*

Britain is one of the most prominent Others in the discursive construction of Scottishness in the media. The same strategies are used here as in the construction of Scottishness. Here is an attempt to characterise Britishness:

> there being something fundamentally unacceptable to **British notions of fairness** in public debate that one side in this controversy should have three times as much television exposure as the other. (HERA170279)

In which way can we say that the notion of fairness is particularly British and not universal? Yet here it is used to characterise 'Britishness'. The following extract attempts to characterise a sub-section of the Scottish population, namely the business community:

> Where stands Scotland's business community on the devolution fashion parade?
> Distinctively in **pin stripes** but **extremely reluctant** to enliven its working clothes with **a dash of tartan**. And that is just the disappointingly small number of business leaders who are prepared to strut their stuff on the political catwalk. (HERA220897)

The extract contrasts a Scottish 'dash of tartan' with 'pin stripes', i.e. truly 'Scottish' businessmen and 'British' businessmen. Although one can debate whether the pinstripe reference is English or British, in this context it illustrates the way the Scottish business community fears the loss of the protective and larger British market in case of devolution. In any case, the Scotland's business community is not truly Scottish, but Anglo-British.



Cartoon 59. Published in *The Scotsman* on 9 September 1997

Another strand of argument is related to the claimed benefits of the Union. This involves situating Scotland in the UK framework, nesting Scotland in the British Other. Devolution is not just in the interest of the people of Scotland, but the future of the whole of Britain depends on the constitutional reform:

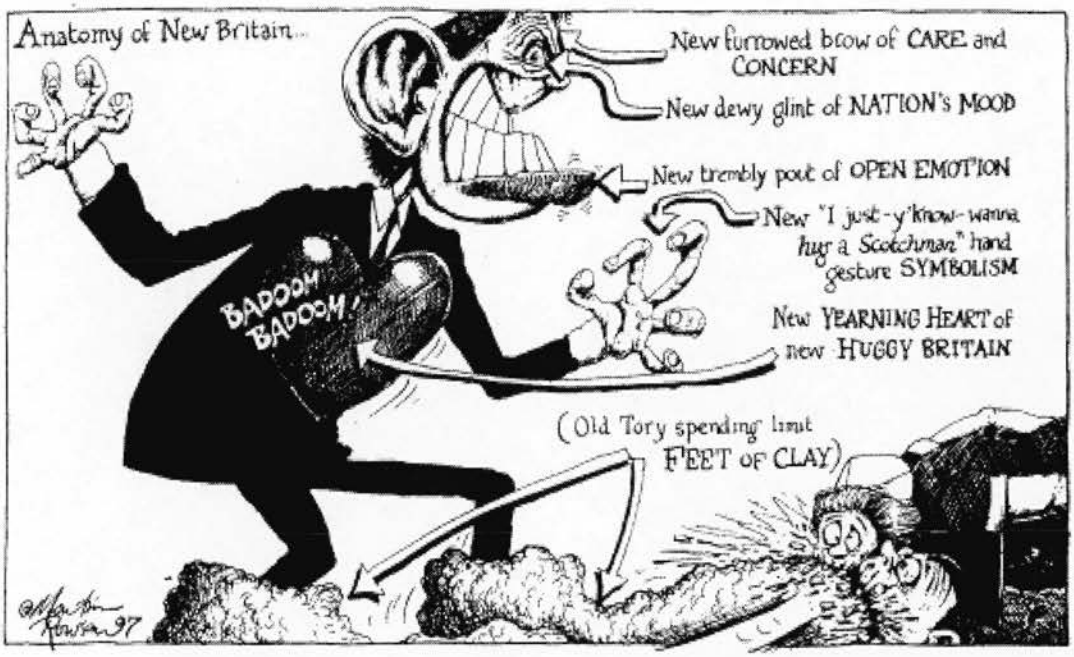
> It is an instrument for our use, a great opportunity which must not be missed, not only for the sake of Scotland but also **for the health of the British constitution at large**. (SCOT230279)
>
> Devolution is, or is supposed to be, a flagship policy. Neither is it exclusively Scottish, for the Welsh will have their assembly and **the constitutional reform of the United Kingdom will follow in train. It is, therefore, of the first importance for the whole of Britain.** (HERA280897)
>
> 'Why should Scotland have a parliament?' [...] **because both Scotland and Britain need home rule for Scotland.** (SCOT080997)
>
> We believe that in Scotland the hopes for future present themselves with particular clarity and **signal the way ahead for Britain as a whole**. (HERA050997)
>
> **Britain itself will meanwhile be renewed and the reform of the constitution advanced.** [This is] not trivia. (SCOT110997)
>
> There are many who believed they were voting to end the Union on Thursday. They need constant reminding that **Scotland voted for a parliament which is still firmly wedded to the United Kingdom**. (SCOT1500997)

And here is another extract from the *Herald*, one of the two editorials published just a few days after the death of Princess Diana and before the devolution referendum in Scotland.

> ... what has happened to **our country** and where we go from here. This is a uniquely difficult question to address. It is unlikely, as we said yesterday, that there has been a sea-change in the nation from **the sort of people who bear emotion stoically to those who are able to display it publicly; from stiff upper lip to trembling lower lip.**
> **The people of Britain** have always had a deep reservoir of emotion and we need look no further than the dreadful event at Dunblane[38] and the utterly comprehensible displays of public mourning which followed it to see evidence of this. Yet we must at least examine the possibility that a change of attitude. (HERA050997a)

The first paragraph of the above extract ends with characterising *the* nation – the British nation, not the Scottish one. The nation in question consists of people who previously used to 'bear emotion stoically', but now is able to express their emotions in public; a nation who was previously described by 'stiff upper lip,' and now with 'trembling lower lip'. A change indeed. The second paragraph continues to characterise the nation. There has been no change, as the nation in question has always had 'a deep reservoir of emotion'. Interestingly though, the example in this case is a Scottish one (Dunblane), not a British one. This sea-change in the mood of the nation and the lip-metaphor was picked up by cartoonist Martin Rowson:

[38] On 13 March 1996, a gunman shot dead 16 children and their teacher in Dunblane Primary School in Scotland.



Cartoon 82. Published in the *Guardian* on 15 September 1997

The cartoon jokes about the 'huggy Britain', 'open emotion' and 'new dewy glint of nation's mood' – and suggests that Tony Blair PM is using all these changes and novelties to his political advantage.

7.3.4.1. Westminster

There is another dimension to the British Other – Westminster. It is not just other nations and states that are evoked as the Other. Wellings (2002:107) suggests that 'political institutions can also be invoked as markers of identity', and indeed, this is the case in Scotland. Invoking Westminster can be seen as replacing national categories with populist categories – i.e. it is not necessarily Scotland *versus* Westminster, but rather ordinary people *versus* (distant) politicians. But in the following section I discuss some of the ways how Westminster is used as the Other in the media.

The 1979 referendum partially failed, because the No-campaign managed to attach

> to the Assembly all the sins which the public associate with central [Westminster] government. Truly were the sins of the father visited on the unborn son. (SCOT030379).

Robert McNeil wrote disappointedly, that despite of high hopes and expectations to the new Scottish parliament, 'all we get is son of Westminster' (McNeil 2003). Dissatisfaction with Westminster way of government grew throughout the second half of the twentieth century and provides a frequent object of othering. Hence Westminster is often evoked as the Other in the media discourse, as the following extract from the Scottish tabloid *Daily Record* reflexively shows:

> For the first time in nearly three centuries Scots will be able to make their political voices heard **without shouting down to Westminster and always blaming Westminster for EVERY damn thing that goes wrong.** (DREC080279)

As the proposed Scottish Assembly or Parliament (in 1979 and 1997 respectively) are markers of Scottish nationhood, then a non-Scottish institution of a similar kind is discursively used to mark the Other – the Westminster. Two main themes can be identified in relation to the Westminster Other. Firstly, there is the issue of democratic deficit. So-called 'radical democratisation' was one of the three main perspectives in the devolution campaigns (Hassan and Warhurst 2002). According to this perspective, being governed by Westminster is undemocratic, as Scotland is mis-, under- and un-represented. Secondly, and related to the first one, there is sheer dissatisfaction with Westminster and its way of government.

Non- and un-representative Westminster?

First, lets us look at claims that Westminster is not properly representing Scottish opinion. The whole idea of devolution in Scotland was to bring government closer to the people, and to cater better for Scottish needs and opinion. It is therefore also a prominent theme in media discourse.

> The idea that the Scottish Grand Committee should meet there, that **the Parliament's procedural rules should be changed to make it more representative of Scottish opinion**, have won the widest support. (SCOT240379)
>
> The greatest danger to the unity of Britain lies in the *status quo* which meant that for 18 years Scotland voted in large Labour majorities with a respectable vote also for the Liberal Democrats and the SNP, only to be governed, election after election, by Tories. [...] A decent degree of devolution**, bringing responsibility for our own domestic affairs to a Scottish parliament, will end for good the democratic deficit of the past.** The *status quo*, with its acceptance of the previous anomalies and its blind misunderstanding of the

> feelings which they raised, holds the real potential for raising the spectre of separatism. (HERA080997)

The first extract is from a leader article written three weeks after the devolution referendum in 1979. Though arguing that the Westminster parliament should be brought into 'sync' with Scottish opinion, the extract is also implying that the current Westminster Parliament was unrepresentative of Scottish opinion.

Outdated and undemocratic Westminster?

Here is a rather colourful – and condemning - description of what is going on in Westminster. Once again, Westminster is the negative Other, 'unable' to govern Scotland properly. Aiming to justify the need for the Scottish Assembly, the leader blames Westminster for inefficiency and a number of other problems:

> The annual negotiations between the Government and the local authorities are conducted in **considerable obscurity**, with all **the mumbo-jumbo which the witch-doctors of our complex society pass off as rational analysis: incantations (advance politicking), spells (equalisation formulae) and invocations of a deity (the Treasury).** At Westminster the legislature, whose power rests on the financial restraints it may impose on the executive, has for a long time been **unable to exercise sufficient control over public spending, not to speak of other aspects of Government activity. Westminster is an institution derived from a more spacious age. Now the flow of Parliamentary paper overwhelms even the most conscientious MP.** (SCOT090279)

Obviously, the spin-doctors and their 'mumbo-jumbo' did not arrive in Westminster with the Labour landslide victory in 1997. The outdatedness of Westminster is source of various media accounts, all tied up with the unsuitability of Westminster as the governing body of Scotland – and the unsuitability of Westminster as a role model for the proposed Scottish legislature.

> Many, and probably most, of the Yes voters will have reservations about the Scotland Act, such as the lack of revenue-raising powers for the Assembly and the rejection of proportional representation, but still consider that an imperfect Assembly will be better than no Assembly at all, and that future improvements can be made in the light of experience, rather than **in another prolonged theoretical discussion by Westminster politicians**. (SCOT220279)

Westminster politicians are out of touch with people, engaging in 'prolonged theoretical discussions' about devolution (and probably many other issues). The

expression 'in *another*' implies that politicians do that consistently and continuously. Westminster is ponderously traditional:

> With a reasonable-sized workload and civilised working hours, the Assembly is to be welcomed**; it is Westminster which is to be feared for a ponderous traditionalism** that is on a par with that of the trade union movement. (SCOT050279)

The leader article above uses a transformation strategy. It describes a potential new form of government, which at the same time is strongly differentiated from the current British one – from the 'ponderously traditional' Westminster. Westminster MPs are aware that the current system of government does not suit Scotland, and as they cannot pretend otherwise, they just keep quiet and avoid confronting and facing that issue.

As stated, the two strands of argument here are interconnected. Being unrepresentative of Scotland is not the only problem of Westminster:

> Why should Scotland have a parliament? First, because both Scotland and Britain need home rule for Scotland. The strains placed upon the United Kingdom have grown steadily in recent years. Scotland has felt government to be **remote, unresponsive and, worst of all, undemocratic**. The nature of Scotland has not been well reflected in the Westminster Parliament. **Its needs have not always been properly met within the crowded legislative programmes of the Commons.** (SCOT080997)

In addition to its unrepresentativness, Westminster is remote, unresponsive and undemocratic, over-whelmed with legislative programmes and over-strained. These problems are endemic, and inhibit Westminster from functioning properly and democratically, and especially restrict its ability to reflect and response to Scotland.

The theme of Westminster having to deal with much more than it is capable of is a recurrent one:

> Parliament's handling of it has provided a most interesting and illuminating demonstration of Westminster's constitutional conservatism**, its reluctance to surrender even a few of the responsibilities which are too numerous to be handled effectively,** and its remoteness from Scottish opinion. In the past century of intermittent debate about devolution, **the burdens of government have multiplied enormously, and the Civil Service, including the devolved Scottish branches of it, has grown and grown.** But there are a deplorably large number of MPs who cling to all-round authority (such as it is) for

Westminster, even if **it is manifestly failing to keep proper watch over bureaucracy**. (SCOT050279)

The Assembly has the power to make itself a considerable force for good in Scottish life [...] the Assembly will be able to debate the issues with **a thoroughness beyond the capacities of Westminster.** Its recent reform of the Scottish divorce laws has left the process still more cumbersome and expensive than was intended. (SCOT070279)

The power to shape our educational system should be a particularly valuable product of devolution. Here, if anywhere, we need to regain the sense of responsibility and enthusiasm which mature people get from making their own decisions and **not living under the tutelage of policy-makers preoccupied with other problems**. (SCOT080279)

One of the Assembly's contributions will be to subject spending programmes, and therefore the policies underlying them, **to a much greater degree of examination than is now possible.** (SCOT090279)

Secondly, there are many individual ideas crying out for attention: a new bankruptcy code, a reform of warrant sales and of sheriff's officers, a revised code of evidence, a reform of criminal appeals, an updating of family law, and so on. **Such changes may wait for years in the Westminster queue. But an Assembly is designed to act promptly and with understanding on precisely such matters.** (SCOT120279)

The break-up of Britain is hypothetical and improbable; the **malfunctioning of the centralised, cluttered Westminster system** of government is not hypothetical at all. The Scottish Assembly ought to command itself to moderate, practical people who desire to improve the system of governing Scotland and the UK. (SCOT220279)

All above extracts suggest that Westminster has taken on too much, and cannot cope with the issues that concern Scotland in a satisfactory manner. The third extract ties to establish the paternalistic approach for governance in Scotland, as adopted by the government in London. Scots are a 'mature people' and should not live under the 'tutelage' of policy-makers who are not interested in solving the problems in Scotland. The sixth extract emphasises that while Westminster is malfunctional, centralised and cluttered, a Scottish Assembly would be moderate and practical, aiming to improve the governing of Scotland AND the United Kingdom. Once again the *topos* of devolution being good not just for Scotland, but for the whole of Britain, is evoked. In all these extracts, Westminster is a negative foil, the Other, from whom the new Scottish political body would be different. The Scottish assembly would be uncluttered, prompt, understanding, thorough, effective, and keep proper watch over

bureaucracy. It was therefore of necessity that devolution in Scotland would take place, as the Assembly could considerably improve on the matter. The proposed assembly would spend more time on discussing policies relevant for Scotland. And it would consult the people of Scotland while doing so – again something that is not done in Westminster:

> It is also open to the Assembly **to make a break with the Westminster tradition**, according to which the Government after consulting interested parties presents the legislature with what it hopes is a *fait accompli*; instead the Assembly, if it chooses, will be able thoroughly to debate issues before legislation is contemplated or drafted. (SCOT070279)

As we know, the new Scottish Parliament prides itself for its extensive civic consultative process, which was one of the main criteria proposed by the Consultative Steering Committee.

Bridging the two strands of arguments - Westminster is non-representative of Scotland and the Westminster system is outdated - are the arguments that illustrate the outdated nature of Westminster manners through their (non-)dealing with devolution issue.

> The way in which Westminster**, timidly, tediously and belatedly**, tackled the matter of Scottish devolution demonstrated once again **the unsatisfactory state of the UK Parliament.** When **silence and unresponsiveness**, which worked well enough for the Unionists at the time of the Covenant in 1949, became inadequate weapons against the Home Rule pressures of the 1960s and 1970s, they were replaced by **scare-talk** about the disasters inherent in devolution in general, and this piece of legislation in particular. (SCOT050279)

Here the topic of the unsatisfactory state of political present is developed further. It is indicated that these problems are recurrent; the unsatisfactory state of Westminster is revealed 'once again'.

> **Many MPs have made no secret of their boredom about devolution, but Parliament's handling of it has provided a most interesting and illuminating demonstration of Westminster's constitutional conservatism, its reluctance to surrender even a few of the responsibilities which are too numerous to be handled effectively, and its remoteness from Scottish opinion.** [...] But there are a deplorably large number of MPs who cling to all-round authority (such as it is) for Westminster, even if it is manifestly failing to keep proper watch over bureaucracy. (SCOT050279)

> Scotland has its own educational system. But the important decisions (school-leaving age, comprehensive structure, etc.) are taken elsewhere, and **pressure for assimilation with the larger English system is a pervasive force.** Education, with the regrettable exclusion of the universities, would be a major responsibility of the Scottish Assembly. **This is not one that has been discharged with any zeal by Parliament, and discussions in the Scottish Grand Committee tend to be perfunctory.** (SCOT080279)

Note how Westminster is marked off as an 'English system' in the above extract – a mixed-proxy case again. This is not unreasonable – as Westminster is numerically dominated by the English constituencies and hence can be seen as an instance of England dominating Scotland. Moreover, attacking Westminster may be a way of othering England/the English in a way that does not render the newspaper open to accusations of racism.

Is conflict inevitable?

The media know, however, that devolution is not the automatic solution to all problems in Scotland. Despite the failure of the 1979 devolution referendum, the *Herald* warned:

> It would be unwise to suppose that the pressures that produced the devolution campaign in the first place have now vanished for ever - that, suddenly, there is no case for relieving the legislative pressure on Westminster, or for bringing about the direct political accountability of St Andrew's House. (HERA030379)

The media are aware that the proposed assembly/parliament in Scotland will not automatically mean improved relations between the London and Edinburgh parliaments. While the Scots may stop 'shouting down to Westminster and always blaming Westminster for EVERY damn thing that goes wrong' (DREC080279), there will still be issues.

> Indeed, it is a tribute to the perspicacity of the Scots that they have recognised that this Act has many shortcomings. It fails to take account of the changed position of the Scottish MPs after devolution and is therefore a constitutional powder-keg. **It may also create a near-permanent conflict between the assembly and Westminster by failing to equip the new chamber with even the most modest tax-varying powers.** For the majority of Scots - anxious as they are to preserve Scottish influence at Westminster and maintain the integrity of the union - these are important flaws in the Act. (HERA010379)

> Scotland may well have special interests within the EU, particularly on agriculture and fishing, but these can best be addressed through the London-based ministries. That, at least, is the message we are receiving.
> If true, **it does not bode well for the future of relationships between Edinburgh and London.** It is accepted that Scotland is heading towards it own parliament but Labour has made clear that this move is being done to strengthen the Union. Where is the demonstration of that unity if Scottish ministers can be given so little influence on so significant a project? (SCOT061097)

Remote, undemocratic, unresponsive, malfunctioning, cluttered, pervasive, tedious, timid, perfunctory, centralised, obscure, belated, ponderously traditionalist – these are just some adjectives and keywords used in the Scottish media in conjunction to Westminster Parliament. Westminster is definitely a negative Other for Scotland. Note how most of the above extracts are from 1979 referendum – maybe in 1997 the unsuitability of Westminster is so obvious that it is not even worth mentioning?

7.3.5. Europe

There are two dimensions to the European Other – the supranational EU/abstract Europe in general and also a particular state in Europe. I will look at these aspects separately below.

Europe in general and the European Union

Each national identity 'is constructed and continually reconstructed as a collective sentiment, self-awareness, self-definition and boundary setting of a national group, but at the same time in continued interaction with the surrounding national groups in the cultural and geopolitical context of Europe' (Triandafyllidou and Spohn 2003:8). Europe is a supranational entity, that can act as the Other for the discursive construction of national identity (Petersoo 2000). Scotland is no different. Ronald Black, the Gaelic editor of the *Scotsman,* dreams about the time when 'Scotland will be a *normal* European country', while Richard Holloway rejoices that 'now we think of ourselves as a vibrant part of complex and changing European culture, and it feels good' (Devine and Logue 2002:25, 102). Again, the dialectic with Europe can be negative or positive. Garton Ash shows how Europe as a supranational external Other can be very ambivalent in the context of the so-called 'European debate' taking place in Britain. This debate, he writes,

> is part of a tortured national self-examination, an English, Scottish, Welsh, and Irish agonising about self. In this debate, 'Europe' appears as a threat to the very existence of Britain (mainly English) 'Euro-sceptics' of the Right; as a chance to transform the very nature of Britain for (often Scottish and Welsh) 'Euro-enthusiasts' of the Left; as both opportunity and problem for the large centre; but for all sides as something basically external. There is 'Europe' there and 'Britain' here, and the argument is about the relationship between them and us. (Garton Ash 1997:118)

Historically, Britain (and England) 'has always been seen as a reluctant European, a reputation which Mrs Margaret Thatcher ... enhanced with her confrontational approach at the European scene' (Ichijo 2002:3).



Cartoon 228. Published in the *Guardian* on 20 March 2002

Hence one can say that while 'Europe' is considered a negative Other for England, it is usually seen as a more positive Other in Scotland. While 'the conceptual connections between being Scottish and being British and Protestant (Colley 1996) appear to have weakened over the twentieth century,' the connections between 'Scottishness and ... Europeanness have become stronger' (Hearn 2000:11). 'Scotland entered the new millennium as a relatively affluent European society, semi-detached from the UK, and better able to sit with other European nations' (McCrone 2001a:29).

Europe as a positive Other is also used in political campaigns. Think of the Scottish National Party's 'Independence in Europe' slogan during the first Scottish Parliament election campaign in Spring 1999 – a policy they adopted in 1988 (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:81). At a UK level:

> Tony Blair wants to forge a new relationship between the European institutions and the UK after years of Tory hostility (SCOT061097).

The European Union provides 'an alternative political structure' to the Scots, 'a new Union to augment or even replace the older British one' (McCrone 2001a:27):

> In a European context Scotland is not running the danger of being engulfed by a disproportionately large and powerful England; the centralising power of Brussels is further away and less tight; identity and ethnocentrism can flower on the backdrop of an amalgam of less distinct others. (Trandafoiu 2004:51)

Nairn (2000:17) states though, that European Union should not be just seen as 'a convenient replacement for the United Kingdom', but rather like 'a new way of obtaining independence in the post-imperial and post-Cold War world'. The above quotations show, as suggested earlier, that identity is indeed always a two-sided coin. While trying to disassociate itself from England, Scotland identifies itself as European. As Therborn writes, 'identity should not be conceived as just a blank negation with the Other. Identity is also, normally, something positive, an identification with somebody, or something' (1995:230); otherness does not always necessarily 'equate to foe, but to friend' (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:79). The negative othering goes hand-in-hand with positive othering. It is therefore puzzling that while negative Others have enjoyed plenty of attention from nationalism scholars, the other side of the coin, the positive Other, has been neglected.

Europe as a supranational entity does act as the Other for the discursive construction of national identity in the Scottish media. Ichijo has noted that 'the idea of Europe as distinct from the EU was hardly evoked' in the British media (2002:8). And just as in the British media, the idea of Europe as distinct from the European Union is hardly evoked in the Scottish media. For example, the *Scotsman* headlines with 'Is Scotland in Europe or not?', and then continues discussing the forthcoming Britain's presidency of the European Union in January 1998 (SCOT061097). 'Europe' is used metonymically as shorthand for the 'European Union'. Indeed, the use of 'Europe' in

the media is quite complex, and the journalists are aware of the controversial use of the term. One London interviewee admitted that

> I'm sure if you were to analyse the *Telegraph* and other papers, you would find that 'Europe' does get used when ... the alternative I tend to use is the 'Continent' but that's not particularly good ... if you want to refer to the other 14 members of the EU. Brussels is slightly [better, but] if you're an EU purist you object to that too because it's not quite clear whether you're referring to the Commission or the Parliament or the Commission and the EU, which are distinct bodies too. (Interview 17)

Indeed, the same leader article from the *Scotsman*, 'Is Scotland in Europe or not?' reflects the confusing use of terminology. The whole article deals with the forthcoming British presidency of the European Union, and the suspected attempts to keep Scottish politicians from being in charge of any of the committees – apparently because

> Whitehall and its ministers and mandarins want to make a point about Scotland and its place in the Union (SCOT061097).

The 'Union' in question here is the United Kingdom, not the European Union. This, of course, only adds to the terminological confusion. Instead of and in addition to 'European Union', the article makes full use of the correct and incorrect alternatives: 'Is Scotland in Europe or not?'; 'Britain's presidency of the European Union;' 'Scottish ministers taking a keen interest in EU affairs;' 'a new relationship between the European institutions and the UK;' 'Scotland will be very much in the second division of Britain's efforts in Europe;' 'that he [Donald Dewar] could go to Brussels and explain just what Scotland's future is to be'. Five days earlier, the *Scotsman* referred to European Union as 'the continent' in its leader article, when discussing Tony Blair's speech on the UK/EU relationships (SCOT011097).

Another European country

While Europe as an abstract entity often fulfils the role of the Other, then occasionally the othering is more specific. A named country in Europe can be used as a reference point for the discursive construction of Scottishness. For example, Angus Calder writes in *Being Scottish* that 'olden Scotland ... had more affinities with democratical Scandinavia and Gaelic Ireland than with England' (Devine and Logue 2002:47). The Scandinavian Other is used in quite a few occasions in the Scottish media. One can think of two reasons for the prominence of the Scandinavian Other (as opposed to

Catalan or Quebec Other, which are the usual comparative reference points in nationalism studies literature about Scotland). The historical Nordic (mainly Norse) background and connections of the Scots are still mentioned here and now. And, secondly, the successful small-but-independent Scandinavian states are often used as a role model for the Scots. For example, the Democracy for Scotland, or 'The Vigil' posted road signs on the Carlton Hill in 1993, 'pointing to other small but self-governing European countries such as Norway and Denmark' (Hearn 2000:24).

The role of Scandinavian Other was emphasised by the SNP in 1970s: if Scotland were independent, their share of North Sea oil revenues 'would be enough to transform this small land into another Norway. Thus the country's future is automatically identified with established and prosperous nation-states' (Nairn 1981:192). I came across a number of positive references to Scandinavian countries in the data corpus. For example:

> Whether it will make the most of it remains to be seen, but **the assembly will have an opportunity to learn** not merely from the Westminster system of government, which nowadays tends to be highly regarded only by the narrowest of its own inhabitants, but **from all the other systems from Scandinavia to Ireland to North America**. (SCOT050279)

While distancing the potential Scottish assembly from the 'dodgy' Westminster (i.e. one which is regarded highly only by its very narrow-minded inhabitants), the extract points to Scandinavian countries as a potential example and positive Other. Scotland could learn from the experience of the Scandinavian countries in the future. Sometimes the other counties are used in a 'me-too' argument:

> **Why should the Scots be any less responsible, any less able to govern than the Danes or the Irish?** (SOS070997)

Sometimes this othering is done ironically:

> People are fond of their racial purity, another term which is incapable of being explained in a comprehensible way. **Icelanders, in many respects the nicest people in the northern hemisphere, are desperately proud of their Norse blood**. Don't tell them that research shows a heavy admixture of Celtic blood groups; they won't thank you for the information. (HERA290897)

Although the Icelanders are a nice people, they have a rather ethnic definition of themselves as a nation, as opposed to the much more civic self-identity of the Scots, and the *Herald* uses that to make fun of the Icelanders.

Of course, the Scandinavian countries do not provide the only reference points to Scotland. Here are the Netherlands as the Other:

> YOU can explain the facts in any way you wish, but the conclusions of an official pilot study into the comparative costs of criminal legal aid make for disquieting reading. Scotland's system costs half as much again per capita as that in England and Wales; **nine times that of the system which operates in the Netherlands.**
> **The Dutch,** it seems, have streamlined their procedures, ensuring that fewer cases are prosecuted in the courts. (SCOT260997)

The following extract, on the other hand, is not very complementary to the Scots:

> It may be said of public finance in Scotland, as it was of Schleswig-Holstein (or was it the Balkans?), that only three people understand it: one has forgotten, one has gone mad, and the other can't explain it. (SCOT090279)

A European entity in question, be it the Schleswig-Holstein in Germany or one of the Balkan states, is a non-significant Other. The extract is implying that they are all the same, that they do not matter, they do not deserve further specification. The country of reference is somewhere 'out there' and where exactly is of no relevance to the Scots. This distancing functions as a strategy of dissimilation, showing that Scotland is different from the countries in question.

7.3.6. The World

'The World' as a very abstract, but nevertheless a positive external Other figures quite prominently in Scottish media discourse. Scotland needs to re-establish its place in the world arena of nation-states. A former MP George Reid (SNP) and currently the Presiding Officer of the Scottish Parliament, argued in 1995 that '[A]mid this global return to the roots of nationhood, Scotland is the sole spectre, the phantom at the feast. The only country in the world with its own administration, law, education, even its own national football team - but no parliament' (Reid 1995). This can be described as 'normalisation perspective', which stresses that Scotland 'should take its *rightful* place on the world stage of nations' (Hassan and Warhurst 2002: 6, my emphasis).

This hint of abnormality, of being the odd one out in the world of nations, is present in the media discourse. Scotland needs to arrive in and return to the world:

> The Assembly is the first stage in **the journey towards a place for Scotland in the modern world,** a small country living in close intercourse with its cousin England; and it is a step from which we must not shrink. (SCOT230279)

This extract from the *Scotsman* contains two types of external Others. First of all, Scotland is situated in a wider world. Secondly, the extract uses a family metaphor in relation to the external Other, the English. The family is common metaphor in nationalist discourse (Kamusella 1999; Phillips 1999:231). However, referring to England as a sibling would have been too intimate. The *Scotsman* is aware that it is inappropriate to speak ill about one's siblings (Kamusella 1999), and therefore a somewhat more distancing family metaphor of 'cousin' is used. Note the element of nested identities (Díez Medrano and Gutierrez 2001) here. Firstly, Scotland is situated in the UK context, together with its cousin England. Secondly, Scotland is situated in the wider world. There are two Others in this extract, UK and 'the world', but by no means are those Others exclusive.

Such normalising language is also common two decades later:

> A devolved parliament is **a historic opportunity for Scotland to take a big step into the modern world.** (HERA270897)
>
> But the key to it all, the issue which could **transform Scotland and propel us into the modern world,** is the election of a devolved parliament with the tax-varying powers which alone will make sense of its existence and, by the bye, sustain and strengthen the union. (HERA280897)
>
> **Our voice in the world** will be stronger. (SCOT110997)
>
> Edinburgh's parliament will serve all of Scotland. With a new electoral system the spectre of sleaze may yet be banished. The battered Conservative Party, ironically enough, will find hope of revival. The tide flowing for independence will be turned, we believe, at the parliament's door. **Scotland will re-emerge into the world** but the partnership of the United Kingdom will be strengthened. (SCOT120997)
>
> A handsome parliamentary building on Calton Hill would **show the rest of the world** that Scotland is ready to do business **in a brave new world.** It is the best decision and, despite the obstacles, the government must not shrink from it. (SCOT051097)

Above extracts indicate the importance of the potential assembly in returning Scotland to 'the world'. It is interesting that these extracts refer to the 'modern world'. It is not just *any* world that Scotland aims to return to. The current world that Scotland inhibits is the un- or pre-modern world where Scotland lives under the tutelage of Westminster. In the bright post-devolution future, Scotland will be part of the much better and more modern world.

The following extract uses a justification strategy – combined with the normalisation perspective – to campaign for the assembly. Scotland is imagined as a nation among nations, as 'nationalism inevitably involves a mixture of the particular and the universal: if 'our' nation is to be imagined in all its particularity, it must be imagined amongst other nations' (Billig 1995:83). That is exactly what has been done here:

> **In every country, except Scotland**, it is taken for granted that national history and literature should be well taught in the schools. An Assembly would be able **to remedy that neglect** without turning our backs on the international scene and contemporary problems. (SCOT080279)

Scotland is an odd one out, and apparently in *every* other country in the world national history and literature are taught, while in Scotland this is neglected. Teaching national history and literature is presented as a taken-for-granted norm, from which Scotland unfortunately diverges. The following extract, also from the *Scotsman,* is similar in its discourse:

> **What other nation** has its own legal system but cannot make its own laws? **What other people** is **so conscious of its identity** and yet cannot express identity through its political institutions? (SCOT080997)

Again, the extract points to the odd-one-out position of Scotland, and stresses the ridiculousness of the situation. The question marks at the end of the two sentences in the extract imply the answer - it is 'no other nation/people'. In that sense the discourse of the *Scotsman* in 1997 has changed little since 1979.

The world is also the external Other that Scotland feels responsible to, if it wants to be taken seriously:

> Above all, we must give **a clear message to the world today**. That means that a high turnout is vital. The Scottish question has dominated British politics for the past five years and **it would reflect poorly on the Scots** if they failed to respond to the challenge which the referendum represents. (HERA010379)
>
> It is difficult to overstate how humiliating a defeat for reform would be. **Who, afterwards, would take us seriously again?** Who would believe the Scots capable of conviction, or even of knowing their own minds? Derision would be all we could expect, and no more than we would deserve. A No vote would suggest either **that Scotland has been lying to itself and to the world**, or that we simply do not care enough about our own future. What sort of nation would that be? (SCOT110997)

The world is not just the Other for Scotland, a reference point. It is a reflexive Other, a mirror. Scotland needs to make sure that it is perceived positively by the Other, that it is recognised by the Other(s) as belonging, as 'one of the them' in the world family of nations. What 'the world' thinks of Scotland, is of importance:

> **We were made to look ridiculous before the world**, as if we knew nothing of what matters and cared less. (SCOT0809897)[39]
>
> Last night the **world was watching Scotland and we were not disgraced.** After 11 September, 1997, seven centuries on from the battle for liberty at Stirling Bridge, 290 years after the cessation of the old parliament, we can believe we will not be disgraced, or disgrace ourselves, again. (SCOT120997)

The second extract is constructing an historically expanding 'we' – linking the Scotland of today to the Scotland of the past. Although the next extracts do not specify the external Other, they imply that how Scotland is perceived by the Other is of importance:

> Would another week of repetitive, sterile argument over the power to vary taxes really have helped that cause? Our bet is that the narrowing of opinion we had already witnessed would only have accelerated. It would, indeed, have been quite an achievement: **making Scotland seem petty and boorish while harming Scotland's cause**. (SCOT080997)
>
> We arrive at this day because Scotland has endured down the centuries against all the odds and with its sense of itself, that kernel of nationhood, intact. Today we make a claim, as of right, to our own future. **If we have lied to ourselves we will deserve no more of the world's respect.** Children and grandchildren

[39] The extract refers to the football match planned (but abandoned) in Scotland on the day of Princess Diana's funeral in September 1997.

> to come will wonder what we thought, and why we failed. "The name of my native land," wrote Robert Louis Stevenson once to a compatriot, "is not North Britain, whatever may be the name of yours". It is a truth we must prove again. (SCOT110997)
>
> There is also a good case for building on the site beside Victoria Quay in the Leith docklands. It would be close to the new Scottish Office whose civil servants will play a key role in governing Scotland. **To the rest of the world it could represent a fresh start and a symbol that a new Scotland had been born, one freed from the shibboleths of the past**. (SCOT051097)

The following extracts nod approvingly at Scotland and the good reputation it has in the world:

> It is the passion **which earned a small nation off on the northern fringes of Europe its name in the world**. It is the passion of poets, scientists, engineers, entrepreneurs and statesmen. It is the thing that has kept Scotland's sense of itself intact for nigh on three centuries while other nations have been born, flickered briefly, and have gone. (SCOT080997)
>
> For now, we celebrate. It is long overdue but it has been earned. There can be no more arguments now over the legitimacy of a devolved Scotland, no more quibbling over our right to choose a future. **The years to come will require wisdom, work and skill. But we were once known, the world over, for those very qualities.** (SCOT120997)

The above two extracts therefore differ from the previous two. While the earlier extracts were worrying about the reputation of Scotland, then the last ones recognise itself in the eyes of the Other as positive, these are more confident. Again, the sheer mentioning of this recognition implies that being recognised by the Other is important. Billig writes that sometimes '"we" will be reassured to have confirmed "ourselves" as the Other of "our" Other' (1995:12). If 'the World' functions as the Other for Scotland, then are the Scots longing to recognise themselves in the eyes of the Other? The last extracts seem to confirm this need.

7.4. Concluding remarks

The chapter has discussed a number of various Others that have been used in the Scottish media in the discursive construction of national identity during the two devolution referenda. It has clearly shown that Scottishness is socially constructed and inherently relational. The collective imagination of the Scottish nation depends on a dialectical opposition – and comparison – to another identity – be it English, Welsh, British, European or something else. There are a number of different Others that are

perceived as relevant in the discursive construction of Scottish national identity, and the chapter has tried to describe some of them. The existence of a distinct Scottish identity is taken for granted, and is not disputed at any point. What is up for debate though is the precise content and character of that identity – and it is here where various Others are invoked. The English neighbours south of the Border, the inherently alien Conservatives, the institutional Other of Westminster, the post-imperial Britain – all are seen as eroding the Scottishness in one way or another. Wales is used in a very ambiguous way to boost the self-confidence of Scotland and to show off Scotland in a better light. But the dialectic of the Self and the Other is not always necessarily negative – the positive positioning of Scotland in Europe and in the modern world are indicative of that. There is no single Other that can be identified in the context of the devolution referenda, but a multitude of different Others, evoked depending on the context and the rhetorical argument the newspaper is trying to make.

But, as Billig says, one needs to get even more microscopic in order to fully appreciate the identity construction process. The next chapter will do exactly this by looking at various linguistic means of realisation exploited in the discursive construction of national identities.

8. National deixes

The word 'deixis' (plural 'deixes') is a Greek word for 'reference', 'to show', and is understood in linguistics as a form of rhetorical pointing, denoting a word whose meaning is dependent on the context in which it is used. This contextual nature of deixis, including personal pronoun 'we', is given to (socio)-linguists. However it has only recently caught the eye and interest of sociologists. Similarly, this thesis did not set out to look at the deictic nature of the media language but in the process of writing the need to become more microscopic become evident. The following chapter will look at various rhetorical strategies that are used in discursive construction of national identities. Focusing on Scotland and using the same data corpus that was used in Chapter 7, the chapter shows how different category relations can be created through often under-specified use of deictic language.

There are a number of rhetorical strategies that are invariably used in discursive construction of national identities. One of the most comprehensive typologies has been developed by the Vienna School of Discourse Analysis, whose 'interdisciplinary approach combines historical, socio-political and linguistic perspectives in a methodologically pluralistic approach' (Wodak *et al.* 1999:9). They focus on following linguistic means of realisation:

- Personal references (anthroponymic generic terms, personal pronouns, quantifiers).
- Spatial references (toponyms/geonyms, adverbs of place, spatial reference through persons, by means of prepositional phrases such as 'with us', 'with them').
- Temporal references (temporal prepositions, adverbs of time, temporal conjunctions, temporal references by means of nouns, semi-prefixes with temporal meaning).

In addition to these, they look at 'the phenomenon of vagueness in referential or other expressions, euphemisms, linguistic hesitation and disruptions, linguistic slips, allusions, rhetorical questions, and the mode of discourse representation (direct or indirect, or other forms of reported speech). And finally, they consider 'the linguistic representation of those social actors who are perceived as members of national community, and the creation of anthropomorphised social actors' (Wodak *et al.*

1999:35). Their approach has been widely adopted and replicated in several recent studies of (national identity) discourse (de Cillia *et al.* 1999; Pardo 2001; Ricento 2003). This chapter concentrates mainly on the use of personal deixis 'we', as well as some other deictic notions.

8.1. The personal deixis '*we*'

'Banal nationalism' has been one of the most popular concepts entering the scholarly discussion about nationalism and national identity during the last decade. Billig introduced it as 'the ideological habits which enable the established nations of the West to be reproduced'. This takes the form of 'continual "flagging", or reminding, of nationhood' through everyday discourse (Billig 1995:6-8). In order to remind nationals about their national identity, 'banal words, jingling in the ears of the citizens, or passing before their eyes, are required'. Such nationalism

> operates with prosaic, routine words, which take nations for granted, and which, in so doing, enhabit them. Small words, rather than grand memorable phrases, offer constant, but rarely conscious, reminders of the homeland, making 'our' national identity unforgettable. (Billig 1995:93)

One needs to be 'linguistically microscopic', says Billig, as it is exactly the smallest words that are most crucial words of banal nationalism (1995:94). Among these small words is the personal deixis 'we', which 'appears to be of utmost importance in the discourses about nations and national identities' (de Cillia *et al.* 1999:163), and has received increased attention in scholarly circles. For example, Ricento (2003) has focused on the varied and skilful use of personal deixis 'we', including metonymical and synecdochical use, in political speeches of early twentieth century 'Americanisers'; and Carbó (1997) analyses the rhetorical use of pronouns in the speeches of various Mexican political leaders. Nationalism and identity scholars seem to agree that in order to understand banal everyday nationalism, one needs to focus on the 'we', on 'how the national 'we' is constructed and what is meant by such construction'(Billig 1995:70).

Analysing the national deixes can be very enlightening in the study of nationalism and national identities. Riggins (1997:8) suggests that inclusive and exclusive pronouns are 'most revealing of the boundaries separating Self and Other', and Kamusella (1999) agrees that 'we' helps to draw clear distinction between the members and non-

members, between *us* and *them*. But while 'we' helps to draw clear distinctions between members and non-members, between *us* and *them*, the deixis 'we' can be also used to make this border diffuse. Especially in political speeches 'there is a constant ambivalence and slippage between exclusive and inclusive "we"' (Fairclough 2000:35). This ambivalence of the 'we' depends on the 'particular rhetorical point the speaker or writer is trying to make' (Riggins 1997:8). This, in turn, makes it difficult to decide whether the speaker is talking about the 'we-the-party', 'we-the-newspaper' or 'we-the-nation', i.e. there is ambiguity over who is included in the community that is imagined in the utterance and who is not.

8.1.1. Personal deixis 'we' in the media

According to Billig (1995:94), newspapers act in national terms and 'the deixis of homeland is embedded in the very fabric of the newspapers'. Fowler (1991:189) suggests an existence of so-called 'implied consensus', a special conjunction of the newspaper and its readership whenever the deixis 'we' is printed, and read, in the newspapers. This implied consensus is 'one of the key characteristics of newspaper discourse' (Brookes 1999:255) and such 'national deictic "context-setting" dialogically anticipates an instantaneous acceptance of speaker-listener unanimity' (Law 2001:301). In this section I question whether such unanimity exists between the speaker and the listener, or between the newspaper and its readership, using the Scottish media as an example.

Although the personal deixis 'we' is often used in nationalist discourse, Brookes writes that

> it would be wrong to suggest that whenever the words 'we' or 'us' are used in newspaper editorials it is the nation that is being automatically denoted. Indeed, most often the use of 'we' and 'us' was not explicitly linked to the nation *within* the text itself. (1999:255)

My findings, discussed later, reveal that indeed in many occasions the 'we' does not aim to be national. However, Brookes suggests that whatever the substantive use of the deixis 'we', it can and should always be interpreted as national. Brookes argues that even if

> these articles do not themselves make explicit reference to national identity, they appear in the context of newspapers which have a shared cultural agenda which is assumed to be national. (Brookes 1999:255)

Following (Anderson 1991), the readers are thus encouraged to imagine a community of fellow readers in national terms, and even though not all deictic 'we's in a text are explicitly 'national' in their nature, they are to be read as national. Especially when the newspapers in question claim to be 'national newspapers':

> National newspapers by definition are nationally distributed[40], and although there may be differences of age, gender, region, social class and ethnicity even within the readership of individual titles, the *limit* is that of nation. So it is within these contexts that the 'we' and 'us' in these articles can be understood as referring to the nation. (Brookes 1999:256)

As with the imagined community in general, the 'we' is limited in its imagining, as 'the group referred to by "we" continues indefinitely until it reaches the boundary formed by another group marked by "they"' (Carbó 1997:95). This argument of the 'national limit' can be contested in both directions however. First of all, the limit is often less than nation (for example, I will talk about the *exclusive newspaper 'we'* later). Also – the limit can be wider than nation, imagining e.g. a *world community*. De Cillia *et al.* (1999:164) write that '"We" can also be found in reference to particular subnational groups ... In a wider, EU context, "we" can also apply to the group of "Europeans"'. But even they admit that 'prevailing implication, however, of "we" remains the national collective of "the Austrians"', i.e. the 'we' is usually national. Hence sub- and supranational references exist, though to a lesser degree, as can be seen in my data.

Although Brookes clarifies the use of personal deixis 'we' in the media, two questions arise. First, Brookes claims that the shared cultural agenda of the newspapers is 'assumed to be national', along the same line as Billig's claim that 'all the papers, whether tabloid or quality, and whether left- or right-wing, address their readers as members of the nation' (Billig 1995:11). But can we be sure of this? When Brookes states that the *limit* of individual newspapers is 'that of nation', and Billig talks about national audience, what does 'nation' mean? Both authors rely on the unproblematic definition of the 'nation'. But what does 'nation' refer to in the context of the United

[40] The claim that 'national newspapers by definition are nationally distributed' is contested in Chapter 4. See also Seymour-Ure (1996) and Tunstall (1996).

Kingdom? The 'nation' can refer to Scotland, Wales etc., and also the UK. The very limit of the nation is often contested, at least when used in the media, as was discussed in Chapter 4. In order for Billig's, Anderson's and Brookes' claims to be true, the 'we' should always be national – and the world to be imagined as consisting of clearly bordered and uncontested nations.

8.1.2. The personal deixis 'we' in the Scottish media.

Scottish media provide a useful case study for the analysis of national deixis. As 'references to the nation have been consistently ambiguous throughout the 20th century – as to whether it is a reference to Scotland or Britain – the relation between the media and the nation in Scotland has remained particularly contested', writes Connell (2003:188-189). This is reflected in the media discourse as well, but until now 'the extent to which Scottish newspapers are capable of engendering a sense of Scottishness due to a tendency to address their readership as Scottish has never been thoroughly examined' (Connell 2003:188). In this section, I will try to overcome this shortcoming by looking at the ways that Scottish newspapers address their readers. By focussing on the use of 'small crucial words', the section tries to understand what kind of 'we's the Scottish newspapers are banally flagging in their texts; what 'nation' they are discursively constructing.

What kind of 'we's can be found in the Scottish national broadsheets? The deixis 'we' can have very different references in different contexts, it can mean many things. Linguists distinguish various 'we's based on their addressee and speaker exclusivity or inclusivity. De Cillia *et al.* (1999:164) write that 'the first-person plural pronoun "we" is the most complex among its type and can encompass all other personal pronouns', suggesting a referential matrix of seven different types of 'we'. Based on the suggestions of Wodak *et al.* (1999), de Cillia *et al.* (1999) Fairclough (2000), and developed in my pilot study, I have chosen to distinguish between three different uses of 'we' in my research.

- Exclusive *newspaper 'we'* – the speaker-inclusive, addressee-exclusive 'we', where the 'we' designates the newspaper.

- Inclusive *Scottish 'we'* – the speaker- and addressee-inclusive 'we', where the 'we' refers to the newspaper and its readers in Scotland, i.e. the 'we' is used metonymically as a replacement for Scotland.
- All-inclusive *British 'we'* – this is similar to the previous one, but the 'we' refers to the whole of Britain, i.e. the 'we' is used metonymically as a replacement for Britain.

In the following section I will analyse these three uses of 'we' in my data corpus. I will thereafter introduce the concept of *wandering 'we'*.

8.1.2.1. Exclusive newspaper 'we'

Not encompassing its readers, the newspaper 'we' is usually just informative, telling the reader what the newspaper has done or believes in. It is difficult to claim that this type of 'we' is (always) national. Indeed, as Brookes claims, 'it would be wrong to suggest that whenever the words 'we' or 'us' are used in newspaper editorials it is the nation that is being automatically denoted' (1999:255). Often the personal deixis 'we' is quite explicitly reader or addressee-exclusive. Here are few examples of exclusive newspaper 'we':

> ... in the course of the next three-and-a-half weeks ***we*** shall sum up ***our*** various arguments for supporting the establishment of the Assembly. ... Today ***we*** shall consider the Scotland Act as the first of many desirable, and overdue, aspects of parliamentary and constitutional reform which Britain needs. (SCOT050279)
>
> The Herald is very clear about its editorial stance in the debate to come. ***We*** will argue as vigorously and persuasively as ***we*** can for a double Yes vote. ***We*** will do that because ***we*** believe the time is long overdue for Scotland to take a decisively greater measure of responsibility for shaping its own future than it has in the past. (HERA200897)
>
> Today, ***we*** hope for a double Yes vote from an informed and involved nation. Tomorrow, and in the days to come, ***we*** hope and expect your involvement and participation in ***our*** pages to continue. (HERA110997)

In all above extracts, the newspaper is the actor, who believes, considers, sums up, thinks and offers – the reader is a recipient at the other end, there to read and accept the information. It would be difficult to claim that the 'we' in above extracts is necessarily to be understood as 'national', and whether or not they should be

understood as *read* in a national context is debatable. There is no obvious invitation to partake in the imagining of 'us'; the 'we does not try to encompass Scottishness. Indeed, in the second extract Scotland is described as 'it', and a distinction is drawn between the newspaper and its (Scottish national) readership in the third extract.

8.1.2.2. Inclusive Scottish 'we'

To illustrate the inclusive Scottish 'we', consider the following extract from the *Scotsman*:

> Let ***us*** take as a premise that it is desirable to sustain the unity of the United Kingdom. Indeed, ***our*** close and cousinly links with the English, ***our*** affection for them and respect for their culture, the degree of domestic, social and economic intercourse between ***us*** - these facts make separatism ... unthinkable. (SCOT230279)

This extract is interesting for several reasons. Firstly, it is clearly addressee-inclusive and imagines its readers as Scottish – although not explicitly mentioning Scotland itself. Here we have the 'implied consensus' between the newspaper and its readers, as suggested by Fowler (1991) and most readers in Scotland would easily recognise their national selves. Through a subtle use of the personal deixis 'we', the newspaper creates a sense of *we*-ness between itself and its readers. Secondly, the *Scotsman* is addressing its readers as Scottish, and is doing that in a clear Self/Other dialectic with 'our cousins, the English'. Thirdly, a family metaphor is used again, invoking an image of a national extended family, where two cousins, England and Scotland, live happily together. Whereas in this extract the family metaphor is used to argue for devolution within the UK, then Reicher and Hopkins show how family metaphors are used by politicians to do exactly the opposite, to argue against devolution. Their Unionist interviewees 'frequently construed the relations between Scotland and England as family-like: intimate and essentially harmonious' (2001:96). Family metaphors are powerful exactly because they can be used to show animosity and consensus, to argue both for and against something. Indeed, their interviewees

> do not only use the metaphor to insist on the harmony in Scottish-English relations, they also use it to recuperate apparent counter-evidence. Thus others might point to fighting, squabbling and bickering; however if they think it indicates real opposition they are sadly mistaken. It is precisely because, as brother nations, the Scots and English get on so well and are so secure in their relationship that they can afford the luxury of surface difference. (Reicher and Hopkins 2001:96)

The fourth interesting aspect about this particular extract, and the few paragraphs that follow, is that this very same Scottish 'we' starts wandering. I will return to this extract later.

The following extract from the *Herald* in 1997 is another example of how the reality of a national 'us' is taken for granted, how the sense of national unity is presented as something unproblematic and real:

> No one doubts - from the stands at Murrayfield or Hampden to the pages of Trainspotting, from the echoing footfalls of the legal fraternity in Parliament House to the interactions of children and teachers in schools across the land, from fishing boat to computer assembly line - that there is something ***we*** call Scottish about what goes on ***here*** and a place called Scotland which gives meaning to ***our*** lives. ***We*** are now being asked to choose how that sense of identity should be nurtured in a new millennium. (HERA200897)

The extract is full of various national deixes ('the land', 'here', 'a place'), and confidently claims that 'no one doubts' the existence of Scotland – begging the question of who is this 'no one' (or actually not – the text assumes there is a consensus among the readers about this 'no one', that it is self-evident to the readers). Like most modern societies, 'Scotland is a country of enormous heterogeneity in almost every significant social respect' (Cohen 1996:805). Nevertheless, this heterogeneity is presented as homogeneity, and regardless of actual differences, 'the nation is always conceived as a deep, horizontal comradeship' (Anderson 1991:6-7). By putting Murrayfield rugby and Hampden football fans, Trainspotting's drug addicts, Edinburgh lawyers, children, teachers, fishermen etc. across Scotland all together into one sentence, the extract suggests that Scotland is one big national family, a thriving imagined community. Scotland is imagined as a unity, and it is assumed that all those different groups of people agree on the single definition of Scottishness. This is achieved by using the personal pronoun 'we' deictically and thus 'replacing differences in origin, confession, class and life-style' (de Cillia *et al.* 1999:164), which certainly are deep between the social groups listed in the extract. The homogeneous ingroup, *homo Scotus*, is constructed discursively – whether it exists in the 'real' world or not.

8.1.2.3. The all-inclusive British 'we'

In a study about the discursive construction of Austrian national identity the researchers found that although 'we' can have 'very different referents according the respective situation', in most cases the personal pronoun 'we' refers to '"the Austrians" of today'. Even in cases where 'in a wider, EU context, "we" can also apply to the group of "Europeans"', the 'prevailing implication, however, of "we" remains the national collective of "the Austrians"' (de Cillia *et al.* 1999:163-164). This is true in the Scottish media as well. Although usually the personal deixis 'we' is used to mean 'us, the Scots', the Scottish newspapers do not always address their readers as Scottish. Sometimes the 'we' is imagined as a much wider community, although still *limited* in Anderson's (1991) sense, encompassing the whole of the UK.

The following extract is from a leader article less than a week before the 1979 referendum, and it is invoking a British 'we':

> ***We*** have no written Constitution. As a ***nation we*** may have a temperamental aversion to anything too rigid and restrictive. ***We*** also have a distaste for systematic constitutional change, though ***we*** are perfectly capable of writing constitutions for other people, sometimes, as in the case of West Germany, with considerable success. Therefore ***we*** must take our opportunities of reform as they arise, and thank ***our*** stars that ***our*** society is sufficiently mature and stable to produce change without violence. (SCOT230279)

Although neither Scotland nor the UK have a written Constitution, the 'we' in question is a British, not just Scottish one. Thus unless it is suggested that the Scots wrote the West German constitution (note the intermittent use of deictic notions *nation* and *people* – *'we'* are a nation, *'they'* are a people – possibly a hint of superiority here?), the fourth 'we' and by implication the others too are at least a British/UK 'we' (in the specific case of West Germany, it could even be imagined as an 'Allied 'we''[41]). The above extract is also an example of the dispositional '*WE are good, because it's our nature*' bias. The language used in the example is very essentialist, describing Britain as having 'temperamental aversion' and 'a distaste', being 'sufficiently mature' and 'perfectly capable' – these are presented as inherent to the non-mentioned British 'we'.

[41] The 1949 German Constitution (the Basic Law or 'Grundgesetz') was drafted by the US, British and French constitutional lawyers. The Germans themselves only had a consultative role in the making of their new constitution.

The British 'we' was especially common during the 1997 referendum campaign. Here it is evoked in contrast to the European 'them':

> The same could be said of Britain's future in Europe, and more particularly of **our** attitude towards economic and monetary union. Mr Blair reckons that it is **our 'destiny',** no less, to lead Europe. The continent **'needs us' and our 'vision'.** So is **our crusader** yet able to make the 'hard choice'- Yes or No? - over the European single currency? Um, not yet. (SCOT011097).

The sudden and unexpected death of Princess Diana during the referendum campaign 'widened' the 'we' from the Scottish to the British 'we'. Here is just one example:

> It is reasonable to assume that the world will not end on Saturday as Diana, Princess of Wales is interred but there must be many people who wonder, in the light of the display of public emotion over her death, what has happened to ***our*** country and where ***we*** go from here. This is a uniquely difficult question to address. It is unlikely, as ***we*** said yesterday, that there has been a sea-change in the nation from the sort of people who bear emotion stoically to those who are able to display it publicly; from stiff upper lip to trembling lower lip.
> [...]
> Yet it is important that ***we*** recognise that in Britain ***we*** have a good and decent system which has served ***us*** well. Governments come and go peacefully, ***our*** democracy has an admirable 70% plus turnout at general elections and, yes, ***we*** are capable of creative and fruitful change, as in the proposals for devolution, if only ***we*** will have the courage and foresight to grasp them. ***We*** have a unique combination of sensible stability and evolutionary reform which serves **us** well. (HERA050997a)

There are three occurrences of the personal pronoun 'we' in the first paragraph. Although Britain is not explicitly mentioned in the first paragraph, it is to be understood as British – after all, Princess Diana was a British royal figure and is evoked here as a symbol of national unity (Shone 2001:323). Thus the first two of them are clearly evoking the British nation, or 'country', to be more precise – a synonym for 'nation-state' (Kamusella 1999). The spatial reference 'here'- another crucial small world – is also pointing to Britain in this context. In the light of these British 'we's, the deixis 'nation' in the last sentence is also to be understood as British, whereas the personal deixis 'we' (underlined) is exclusive, referring to the newspaper itself. The second paragraph is saturated with deixis 'we', all of which can be described as British again. In the first sentence, the Britishness of the 'we' is actually flagged. The references to 'our' government and democracy are British, as are the other elements of the discussion (general elections, political change, etc.) Although the Britishness is flagged only in the first sentence of the paragraph, it is

continuously invoked by using the personal pronoun 'we'. The first paragraph has framed the article in British terms and that defines the whole article. It is here that banal British nationalism is working exactly as Billig (1995) suggested.

8.1.2.4. The wandering 'we'

Echoing the ambiguity of national references in Scotland, as mentioned by Connell (2003), the use of deixis 'we' in the Scottish broadsheets is much more complex. I would therefore like to introduce a concept of a *wandering 'we'*. Riggins notes the contradictory uses of 'we' that occasionally occur within phrases and sentences (Riggins 1997:8). A wandering 'we' represents such a contradictory use of 'we'. It is not a single type of 'we', but rather a particular type of usage that can be traced only within a paragraph or the whole article.

I have previously shown that the personal deixis 'we' can have different referents. One could expect that if an article is trying to appeal to its readers' Scottishness or Britishness, or to put it crudely, if an article tries to make a Scottish point or a British point, it would use the deixes consequently and consistently. But this appears not to be the case. Often the deixis 'we' keeps wandering between the newspaper 'we', Scottish 'we' and British 'we', that is, the deixis 'we' 'wanders' between addressee-exclusive, addressee-inclusive and all-inclusive 'we'. This wandering of '*we*'s makes the question *Who are we?* rather difficult to answer, and raises the question whether the readers can really be expected to (unconsciously and easily) recognise their national selves in the media then.

There are many ways a 'we' can wander. Sometimes a 'we' wanders between various forms of inclusiveness – from exclusive newspaper 'we' to an inclusive Scottish 'we' and/or to an all-inclusive British 'we' – or, indeed, *vice versa*. Sometimes the 'we' wanders spatially – at one moment, the 'we' becomes 'them', or 'they' become 'us'. Here is an example from the *Herald*, showing a case of the pronominal plural wandering between 'we' and 'they':

> Above all, ***we*** must give a clear message to the world today. That means that a high turnout is vital. The Scottish question has dominated British politics for the past five years and it would reflect poorly on the Scots if ***they*** failed to respond to the challenge which the referendum represents. (HERA010379)

One of the possible explanations why the *Herald* wrote 'Scots ... they' and not 'it would reflect poorly on the Scots if *we* failed to respond...', is that the pro-devolution paper wanted to distance itself from those disappointing Scots who might vote 'No' at the 1979 referendum. This would be a case of internal othering in a situation where the *(Glasgow) Herald* supports Scottish devolution, and other right-minded and relevant people (who are included in the 'we') can be expected to do the same. If they do not, they are denied a membership of 'us', and they become the Other, although internal to the imagined Scottish national community.

Another example in which the personal deixis shifts between 'us' and 'them' is from the last devolution referendum campaign:

> A day to seize opportunity
> Carpe diem, says the old Latin tag. This morning ***we*** might prefer a sturdier, native injunction. Perhaps it is time now to say that Scots should rise from ***their*** backsides and prove that ***they*** have meant everything ***they*** have said. This day, over all others, brings with it the opportunity to say what sort of nation ***we*** mean to be. The alternative is clear, familiar and failed. It offers few hopes of real progress. It offers nothing for ***our*** self-esteem. Though ***we*** are to choose, it seems to this newspaper that there is no choice if Scotland is to regain belief in itself. (SCOT110997)

Curiously, the Scottish 'we' in the second sentence becomes a Scottish 'they' in the third sentence. The triple Scottish 'they' then becomes a Scottish 'we' again – which goes through mild distancing again by the end, when Scotland becomes 'it' (as opposed to 'if we are to regain belief in ourselves [as a nation]). Note also the use of the demonstrative 'this' throughout the extract – 'this morning', 'this day, over all others' assume that all the readers understand (and agree with) the importance of the devolution referendum.

The following extract from the *Scotsman* was referred to earlier, and paragraphs 2 and 3 were partially reproduced already. It is a revealing case of how the story about the small crucial words is much more complicated than some scholars imply. It is not just *we-politicians* and *we-the* [national-equals-British] *people* story, as in the discourse of New Labour studies by Fairclough (2000:35), it is *we-politicians-and-all-different-*

kind-of-peoples story. I have numbered the paragraphs in the following extensive extract for the ease of discussion.

> [1] In the last few weeks ***we*** have set out some of the areas in which the Assembly will be able to provide a new and much-missed dimension to Scottish life. The Assembly is not expensive; it is cheap at the price. ...
> [2] But the "good government" argument applies with some though not as much force to the regions of England, and does not entirely explain why Scotland needs the Assembly so badly. Let ***us*** take as a premise that it is desirable to sustain the unity of the United Kingdom. Indeed, ***our*** close and cousinly links with the English, ***our*** affection for them and respect for their culture, the degree of domestic, social and economic intercourse between us - these facts make separatism (a pejorative word for independence) unthinkable. Now all the pressures which produced a surge of SNP political support are at work again in ***our*** political system.
> [3] ***We*** have no written Constitution. As a nation ***we*** may have a temperamental aversion to anything too rigid and restrictive. ***We*** also have a distaste for systematic constitutional change, though ***we*** are perfectly capable of writing constitutions for other people, sometimes, as in the case of West Germany, with considerable success. Therefore ***we*** must take ***our*** opportunities of reform as they arise, and thank ***our*** stars that ***our*** society is sufficiently mature and stable to produce change without violence.
> [4] Thus the Assembly offers more democratic control and helps sustain unity in diversity. It opens avenues to peaceful change. It begins the renewal of ***our*** democratic institutions. But the final argument is psychological and perhaps emotional. The lack of national democratic institutions has grievously sapped Scottish self-belief. Standardising forces have eroded the external signs of ***our*** nationhood, speech, custom and dress, and left ***us*** confused and adrift. The deferential philosophy of dependence on English largesse attacks the qualities of enterprise, invention and self-reliance in which ***we*** once took pride. Dependence is in any case something of a myth, though a powerful one. There is hardly an area of Scottish life that cannot be uplifted and quickened by an Assembly.
> [5] Of course, the institution will be neutral, in the sense that ***we*** can use it for good or ill. Once ***we*** have won the Assembly, ***we*** have another fight on ***our*** hands to ensure that ***we*** make the most of it. But the pessimism of the No camp is really not justified. As a nation ***we*** have produced a long line of administrators of the highest calibre. ***We*** have an experienced Civil Service. ***We*** have a legal system rooted in a distinctive tradition. ***Our*** Labour movement, so often portrayed as a sinister and threatening monster, is strongly influenced by its Christian traditions. And ***our*** religious history, in which presbyterianism imbued almost every area of life, has left ***us*** with an ingrained belief in democratic principles. The Assembly is the first stage in the journey towards a place for Scotland in the modern world, a small country living in close intercourse with ***its*** cousin England; and it is a step from which ***we*** must not shrink. (SCOT230279)

Within these five paragraphs from a rather lengthy leader article *Why we must vote Yes*, the 'we' manages to be exclusive, inclusive and all-inclusive, or newspaper,

Scottish and British. In the first paragraph, it is the newspaper 'we'. In paragraphs two to five, it is a national 'we'. But which nation is being invoked in those extracts is shifting and debatable. Paragraph Two is using Scotland as its referent – in a Self/Other dialectic with the English, 'our close cousins', as discussed earlier. The last 'we' in that paragraph is ambiguous and can be understood both as Scottish or British. The personal deixes 'we' in paragraphs Four and Five are also clearly Scottish. There are references to 'our nationhood', 'our confused and adrift state', 'our former pride' – themes regularly invoked in the Scottish media - in paragraph Four; and Scottishness is explicitly flagged throughout the paragraph – 'Scottish self-belief', 'Scottish life'. In the last paragraph, there are twelve 'we's, all of which can be described as Scottish again. Although the Scottishness of that 'we' is only emphasised at the end of the paragraph, its Scottishness is unchallenged and undeniable. There is an awkward wandering at the last sentence though, when Scotland is suddenly described as 'it', followed by a Scottish 'we' at the end.

Sandwiched between all those Scottish 'we's in paragraphs Two, Four, and Five is extract Three. There are references to the lack of a written constitution and being able to write constitutions for other people – invoking a British, not Scottish reference, as discussed earlier. Although Scotland does not have its own constitution, it is Britain that the paragraph refers to, as can be understood from the mentioning of writing constitutions to other people in following sentence. And even then, the last sentence of that paragraph could be interpreted as the Scottish 'we', as it is only Scottish voters who that have a say in the proposed reform. The wandering of 'we' makes the overall picture quite confusing and complex.

8.1.3. Concluding remarks about the use of personal deixis 'we'

Billig suggests that newspapers engage in banal flagging of nationhood, and that the readers subconsciously pick up the 'national' references hidden behind the small words of 'we', 'here' etc. In the speeches of politicians and in the media, there is usually no 'ambiguity about which nation/country *this* is' that the politician or article refers to (Billig 1995:107). At least in case of Scotland, the situation is not as simple, uncomplicated and clear. As we can see from looking at the use of the deixis 'we', what comprises the national frame of reference in the Scottish media varies depending

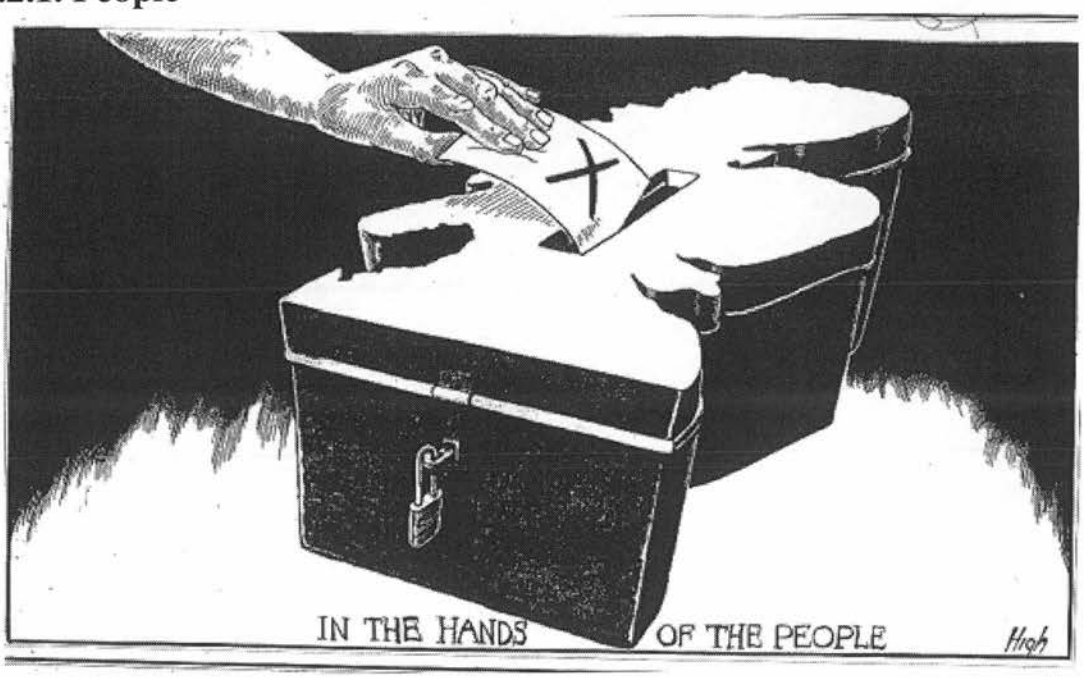
on the context and topic. Since the 'we' can have so many different referents in Scotland, a concept of a singular national media 'we' that is easily recognised and adopted seems misguided in this case. Far from just adopting the national 'we' banally and unconsciously, readers may need to work on the different array of 'we's that they confront in the newspaper, they must bring in some interpretative knowledge in order to recognise their particular national 'we' invoked in the particular article. And even more so, on many occasions the readers have to cope with a wandering 'we' within the same article. Just like there is no single Other at any given time, but a multitude of positive/negative/internal/external Others, there is no simple and banal national 'we' in the media. Instead, the reader is offered a kaleidoscope of different 'we's – exclusive newspaper 'we's, inclusive (sub)national 'we's, all-inclusive (supra)national 'we's, and wanderings of all sorts. The deictic pointing of the 'we' is not so clearly pointed after all. Exploration of my data indicates that similar contextual variations happen with other deictic notions in the Scottish media as well, like 'nation', 'people', 'culture', etc.

It is possible that this wandering of 'we's can be expected under the circumstances, that this is the very nature of nationalist and patriotic discourse in the media. Indeed, as mentioned already, one of the rhetorical uses of the personal deixis 'we' is its very lack of specificity. It can be used by politicians – and journalists – precisely when they cannot be sure who their audiences are – or when they do not want their audiences to be sure about the latter. It would not be unreasonable to suggest that this obscurity and fluidity of deixis 'we' is the very reason it is employed in the media in the first place. It is possible that the journalists do not want their readers to know what does 'we' mean to start with. What is known though, is that the deixis 'we' is extremely ambiguous and flexible. The 'we' can simultaneously represent one or several different (national) categories to different readers. By doing so, the 'we' can facilitate shifts between different national categories and create very different Self/Other dialectics. What 'we' really means in any particular case remains open for speculation and interpretation, and whether the 'we' always perform a nationalising role is also questionable. Indeed, in order to know if and what kind of nationalising role the deixis plays, it would be necessary to study how people actually do understand and interpret such 'we's. There is plenty of scope for future research on this theme.

8.2. The use of other deictic notions

Apart from personal pronouns, other banal national referents or 'little crucial words' are used in the media. Law notes that also 'indicators of time, "today", "now", "then", of place, "here", "there", "away" and the demonstratives, "this", "that", denote where, when and who forms the deictic centre of the nation' (2001). Kamusella (1999) lists a number of national deixes, including 'people', 'community', 'language', 'history', 'people', 'culture', 'land', claiming that whenever these notions are used, it is 'national community', 'national history', 'national language' etc. that are meant. But are these deictic notions always national? In the following section, I will look at the use of various deixes in the Scottish media.

8.2.1. People



Cartoon 69. Published in the *Scotsman* on 11 September 1997

McCrone notes that while Margaret Thatcher might say 'We are the state, and we say no (to Scottish parliament)', the convener of the Scottish Constitutional Convention, Canon Kenyon Wright replied 'We are the people, and we say yes'. McCrone suggests that the use of the term 'people' rather than 'nation' captures 'the breadth of organisational representation in the convention; in other words, to draw upon civil society as the root of political legitimacy' (2001a:46). Kamusella insists that

'nowadays the term "people", in the meaning of "a people", one predominantly uses as a synonym for a nation'. Indeed, the term 'a people'

> creates a firm bond with the pre-national past of the state projecting onto it the nationalist preconception that the present-day people (i.e. nation) populating the state, has lived in it (or on its territory) since the times immemorial. Thus the term falsifies history and contributes to inventing a 'national history' congruent with the demands of a specific nationalism. (Kamusella 1999)

Also, the deictic notion of 'a people' 'evokes the strong mental construct of "one big family" to which one belongs and which protects one' (ibid.).

In the Scottish media, 'people' is used in a number of ways. First of all, the term is used as a synonym for 'nation', as suggested above. Secondly, the term acts in many ways similarly to the personal deixis 'we' - there are instances of Scottish, British and English 'people'. And thirdly, the 'people as electorate' is also common usage of the term. Here are few examples of the 'Scottish people' usage:

> **The Scottish people** today face a historic and complex decision. The verdict which **the nation** passes on the Government's assembly plans will determine the direction of political life in both Scotland and the rest of the United Kingdom for years to come. For Scotland, today's vote is a unique occasion for never since the union of the Scottish and English Parliaments in 1707 have **the Scottish people** been asked to pass judgement on the political system under which they live. [...] The question of turnout is made more important by the 40% rule, for there is a very real danger of a damaging political row over the interpretation of the wishes of **the Scottish people**. (HERA010379)
>
> If it all ends in tears two weeks hence, it will not be sufficient to blame **the apathy of the people of Scotland.** (HERA280897)
>
> It was probably inevitable that Dounreay, with its unrivalled capacity for causing problems and alarming **the people of Scotland**, would haul itself to the top of the political agenda in the days following Thursday's historic vote. (HERA150997)

The first extract above uses the history metaphor, and making a reference to the 1707 Act of Union. By emphasising that continuity (1707/today/years to come), the article forges an historically expanded community (a construction strategy). It also emphasises the importance of high turnout – it matters both in a symbolic level (unanimous historic decision) and practical level (the Cunningham Amendment)[42].

[42] Labour MP George Cunningham introduced the controversial 40% rule in 1978.



Cartoon 18. Published in *The Scotsman* on 27 February 1979

Similarly, there were explicit references to other 'national' people:

> **The people of Wales** are next in line to face up to the responsibilities of taking part in the constitutional improvement of the United Kingdom. (HERA160997)
>
> Perhaps there was insufficient effort made to convince **the Welsh people** of the benefits which might come from even a watery executive assembly of the sort proposed. (HERA200997)
>
> We should remember that **hundreds of thousands of English people** will vote in the referendum and that many, we hope, will serve as Members of the Scottish parliament. (HERA290897)
>
> Icelanders, in many respects **the nicest people** in the northern hemisphere, are desperately proud of their Norse blood. (HERA290897)

In all above extracts, the deictic notion 'people' is used as a synonym for 'nation'. But whereas these examples specified the nationness of given 'people', it is far more common to use 'the people' banally as a synonym for 'the nation'. Here are some examples of *implied* Scottish nation behind the 'people':

> Two years after the reform of the laws it is clear that longer opening hours have not led to the abuse which **many people** had feared. (HERA060279)

The extract refers to the extended licensing laws that were introduced in Scotland in 1977 and thus the 'many people' are to be read as 'the many people in Scotland' that

were concerned about the extended opening hours in Scottish drinking establishments. The following examples are of the 'Scottish people/electorate':

> So, understandably, **people on both sides of the argument** will go to the ballot boxes on St David's Day to cast their vote with something less than passionate conviction. (HERA130279)
>
> Yet should the Kirk seek to influence **the verdict of the people** on this issue by having a statement which clearly favours devolution read from pulpits throughout Scotland? (HERA230279)
>
> The real question - whether we still believe in the power of government to create an inclusive civic culture which can, with vision and determination, enhance a small country's performance and improve **the lives of its people** - goes on begging for an answer. (HERA200897)
>
> He has been typically mute on the first and crucial question of whether there should be a Scottish parliament at all, arguing again that it is **a political decision for the people**. [...] Sir Bruce emphasised yesterday that the first question in the referendum was down to **the will of the people.** (HERA220897)
>
> If, as we believe, the Yes-Yes campaign has a good chance of winning the day, it remains a fact that the devolution issue, of all issues, remains a fiendishly difficult one to assess in terms of **how people will vote on Thursday**. (HERA080997)

The notion of 'British people' was widespread, although the Britishness of 'the people' is not explicitly flagged.

> Since the debate has gone on for a decade already it is hardly possible that it would have been resolved in another four weeks, although the Government would then have been nearer the summer and the presumed breathing space of the long recess which might have **blunted people's memories** of the unpleasant winter of industrial strife. (HERA240379)

During the last devolution referendum, the concept of imagined communal 'we' was stretched from encompassing Scotland to encompassing the entire UK after the death of the Princess of Wales. The same happens to the concept of 'people'. After the death of Diana, the 'people' in question is definitely British, and not just Scottish.

> But **different people mourn in different ways**. In that respect it is wrong and potentially damaging to insist that **people** must mourn in a certain way, do this, do not do that, and, more reprehensibly, feel things which they may not necessarily feel. [...] It is important to be honest and to acknowledge that **there are many people in the country** who, although saddened by the needless death of a fellow human being, do not feel the need to mourn deeply. (HERA030997)

Perverse alchemists are at work, fashioning their spells in reverse and, while we have known from the Middle Ages that base metal cannot be turned into gold, it seems that in terms of **the emotions of the nation** the opposite is entirely possible. This is not a comment on the genuine feelings of grief and loss felt by **large numbers of people throughout the nation** at the death of Diana, Princess of Wales. [...] Grappling with the display of emotion at the death of the Princess, some have sought to render it down by portraying it as some sort of sea-change in **the behaviour of the people of Britain**, a switch in **national habit** from traditional reserve to the free expression of feelings and emotions. [...] This is utter and demeaning rubbish. It is demeaning because it denies the well-springs of decency and emotion which have always existed in **our nation**... [...] **People** must be allowed to grieve for Princess Diana however they want. It is wrong for them to be shunted into emotional straitjackets by those who believe that they know best, who want to shut down **the entire country** on Saturday for what they conceive of as a properly reverential farewell. [...] The fund established for the purpose of honouring the charitable interests of the Princess is another right and proper way for **people** to contribute tangibly to causes which were dear to her heart. (HERA040997)

It is reasonable to assume that the world will not end on Saturday as Diana, Princess of Wales is interred but there must be **many people** who wonder, in the light of the display of public emotion over her death, what has happened to **our country** and where we go from here. This is a uniquely difficult question to address. It is unlikely, as we said yesterday, that there has been a sea-change **in the nation from the sort of people** who bear emotion stoically to those who are able to display it publicly; from stiff upper lip to trembling lower lip. [...] **The people of Britain** have always had a deep reservoir of emotion and we need look no further than the dreadful event at Dunblane and the utterly comprehensible displays of public mourning which followed it to see evidence of this. Yet we must at least examine the possibility that a change of attitude has taken place which may, or may not, continue to filter through the veins of the nation in 10 or 20 years. Above all, we should ask what the events of recent days **tell us about ourselves as peoples of this land**, and **we say 'peoples'** because there is no evidence that the response to the death of the Princess is uniform across Britain. [...] Who can say how the royal family is feeling? Why have they been driven to parade themselves for public consumption when they clearly do not feel like it? Rest assured, there is nothing worse than **people** forced to behave in a way which is alien to them. (HERA050997a)

The above three extracts are all fascinating in terms of wandering national deixes. The wandering 'we' was discussed earlier, but it would not be unreasonable to say here that the national deixes are all over the place. While the previous weeks saw the *Herald* talking about the Scottish 'we', Scottish 'nation' and 'people of Scotland', suddenly the same deixes refer to the supranational entity of Britain. 'This land'

means the land of Britain and not Scotland. There is an interesting sentence in the last extract though: 'Above all, we should ask what the events of recent days **tell us about ourselves as peoples of this land**, and **we say "peoples"** because there is no evidence that the response to the death of the Princess is uniform across Britain.' Thus *Herald*'s leader writer is aware of the various meanings of the term 'people', and seems to distinguish between different peoples of Britain. But it is not sure whether these different peoples are defined in terms of their nationness or just in terms of their style of mourning. Nevertheless, the rest of the article is using the 'people' is evoking a strong mental construct of 'one big family' to which all the people of Britain belong and which protects these people in times of death and crisis.

8.2.2. History

'History' is another powerful national deixis. Whenever history is referred to, it is the national history that is meant. Here is an extract from 1979:

> In **every country, except Scotland**, it is taken for granted that national history and literature should be well taught in the schools. An Assembly would be able to remedy that neglect without turning our backs on the international scene and contemporary problems, pace those who equate concern for Scottish culture with parochialism. (SCOT080279)

Devine notes that, although the education had become a badge of identity in the nineteenth century and was 'one of the ways in which a sense of nationhood was preserved,' the Scottish education system 'did not play this role by promoting the study of the native literature and the national history. On the contrary, the schools were often criticised for their neglect of these aspects of Scottish heritage' (Devine 1999:389). The *Scotsman* echoes this issue above, using the language of tradition and needs. The extract locates Scotland firmly as striving for an equal position in the world of nation-states. The extract insists that 'in every country' of the world national history is taught. Indeed, some campaigning bodies demand that the role of 'Gaelic, Scots, and Scottish history in education' is increased (Hearn 2000:40).

Teaching national history and literature is presented in the extract as a taken-for-granted norm, from which Scotland unfortunately diverges. Of course, in many countries teaching national history and literature has been and remains an unattainable dream towards which countries aim. For example, Estonia under Soviet occupation is

just one example where national literature and history were taught with so-called 'white spots', i.e. the history and literature of the independent republic of 1918-1941 were not covered in schools. But, of course, 'in every country' is more convincing and has stronger mobilising power than the somewhat more correct 'in many/most other countries'. In any case – *which* national history would be taught in Scotland is up for discussion. History is 'relative, based on more or less arbitrary choice of "facts" and links between them which together form a historical narrative' (Kamusella 1999). And history is always written by the victors – hence the history included in the school curriculum written by SNP would probably differ considerably from one written by the Tories and even the Labour Party. But the above extract overlooks these aspects, (falsely) suggesting that there is *a national history* of Scotland that would be taught if Scotland would regain control over what is taught in Scottish schools. There is a link between (teaching of) national history and the Scottish nation-state. Kamusella (1999) writes that Europe continues 'to be *the* land of histories whereas the other areas are perceived to have *no* history(ies) until specific full-fledged nations/nation-states emerge as its *loci*'. Consequently, until Scotland is again a nation(-state), its (national) history cannot be taught as such. However, Scotland's national history is not extinct:

> Well, we're no' feart now. Jim Sillars' verdict on our timid response to the flawed constitutional challenge in 1979 might well have been right. But no-one can now doubt our desire to embrace the biggest constitutional change **in nearly 300 years of our history.** (HERA130997)

It is *our history*, i.e. the history of Scotland that faces *the* big constitutional change. References are made to 1707 and 1979, constructing an historical continuity between 'then' and 'now'. History and devolution are closely intertwined in the following extracts from 1997, all discussing the potential venue for the new Scottish parliament:

> In an ideal world the Scottish parliament would be sited in the royal burgh of Stirling. The town itself is **deeply historic**; its location is the most convenient in Scotland; it has excellent road and rail links; and it has excellent sites for the parliament. (HERA230997)

The first extract establishes the historicity of Stirling, which is also referred to in the second extract. Stirling is deeply historic in many ways – it is the site of decisive battles, the Wallace monument, Stirling Castle. But none of that is mentioned in the leader article, as readers are supposed to know all these details of Scottish 'national history'. But all of them are constructing a historically expanded 'we', creating a link

with the past, so necessary for the authenticity of the nation in (re)making. Wodak *et al.* note that 'historical memory is an indispensable prerequisite for national identity' and 'the further into the past the real or imaginary memories reach, the more securely national identity is supported' (1999:25). The cartoon below goes back seven centuries:



Cartoon 78. Published in *Scotland on Sunday* on 14 September 1997

The potential site of the new parliament lends to a number of further speculations on the history *topoi*:

> As to that, the capital should perhaps be reminded that home rule is for all of Scotland, not just for one council with hard-to-let office space on its hands. **The parliament building**, whether new or refurbished, **should be chosen with history and the nation as a whole in mind**. It should not be a hotch-potch of architectural bits and pieces. Edinburgh - and Scotland - can do better than this. (SCOT130897)
>
> Of more pressing importance is the site. While there are still convincing arguments for simply refurbishing **the old Royal High School** building on Calton Hill - its elegant design and position, for example - it **represents a Scotland which has faded into history**. True, its presence is a reminder of the heady days of the Enlightenment when Scottish thinkers dominated the European intellectual stage but **at this critical juncture in our history Scotland should be looking ahead and not into the past**. (SCOT051097)

This first extract emphasises the importance of the decision for the whole of Scotland. The new Scottish parliament should be a parliament for 'the [Scottish] nation as a whole'. The second extract emphasises the need to look forward – but even when suggesting a need for a break from the past, it establishes continuity with that past (a transformation strategy). This 'break with a past' slightly contradicts leader articles in the same newspaper just a week or two earlier:

> THREE possible sites have emerged from a list of several dozen, it seems, for the new Scottish parliament. Of these a complex based around Edinburgh's former Royal High School begins to look the *most plausible*, and is *certainly the choice of this newspaper.* [...] The High School it must be. (SCOT230997)
>
> it remains difficult to understand why an imaginative scheme for Edinburgh's Calton Hill area, providing *a new focus for the life* of the capital and *a symbol for all of Scotland*, has been discarded. (SCOT300997)

The *Scotsman* has since decided that the new parliament should start anew, afresh, and thus look further from the Royal High School building on Calton Hill. Note the use of the renewal and life metaphors in the last extract. In any case, this is a Janus-faced decision, a no-win situation. Although the new parliament has to look into the future, it still has to look at the past. Despite many benefits, the other proposed venue is inappropriate, as

> **although Leith is the port of Scotland's capital it does not share Edinburgh's historical resonance.** (SCOT051097)

Or to be more correct, Leith is a place with history, but it is not the *right kind* of history, it is not a suitably *national* history:

> IT is no disrespect to Leith, **a proud place with a long history**, to suggest that it is not the ideal site for a Scottish parliament. (SCOT300997).

Despite the claims of Stirling for its deep historicity, and Leith having a proud history as well, Edinburgh, and especially the city centre, is more historic, and thus more suitable as the venue for the new Scottish parliament:

> **If Edinburgh is truly to be Scotland's political capital the parliament must be at its heart. The building must be prominent, commanding, a sign in stone of what home rule is supposed to mean**. It **must be knitted into the historic fabric of the city,** not deposited willy-nilly at the waterfront simply because the Scottish Office has a piece of land handy. **Leith is on the fringe of Edinburgh** and no worse, in any other circumstance, for that. To choose it

as the site for the parliament sends out the wrong signals, however, and plants the disturbing suspicion that our new democracy might be a prisoner of bureaucracy. (SCOT300997)

By history and tradition Edinburgh has the greatest claim to be Scotland's political capital. It is also the centre of the country's legal and educational institutions and an international financial centre in its own right. Even its most perfervid detractors cannot deny these facts. **If Scotland wants to be regarded as a nation, and perhaps even in the future as an independent country, it is inconceivable that its parliament should not sit in its capital city.** (SCOT051097)

Nations do not only need myths of common origin and past, but can also 'thrive on myths of the future' (Eriksen 2004:53). And although Scotland is looking into its past to justify the need for devolution, it is also firmly looking into the bright future ahead without Westminster dominance.

But it is fair to say that in most extracts above the term 'history' is used deictically to note 'national history', and the media is actively discussing whether and which 'history' is suitably 'national'.

8.2.3. Nation

Nation is one of the most important deictic notions in the context of the discursive construction of national identities. Nation 'depends on people defining a community as such' (McCrone 2001a:52), and it is illuminating to see how the media define the concept. Again, the deictic reference of the 'nation' changes – sometimes 'nation' means Scotland, sometimes Britain. And sometimes it wanders between these two, as most other deictic notions I have looked at previously.

8.2.3.1. Scottish nation

As with previously discussed deictic notions, 'nation' usually means the Scottish nation. The existence of such a nation is taken for granted:

So why vote yes, as the Economist very reluctantly would if it were on the electoral register in Scotland? The main reason is that a bad scheme does not destroy a good principle, which is that **a nation - such as Scotland undoubtedly is**, with its own legal, educational, and other systems, not to speak of **a strong sense of national identity** - has the right to govern its own affairs. (HERA260279)

> Secondly, there is a difference between **a nation** and a principality. It is now established beyond doubt that Scotland and Wales are different cases. The point of home rule here was to enable **Scotland as a nation** to fit more easily within the United Kingdom. (SCOT200997)
>
> Even John Major did not attempt to deny what Mr Mandelson seems to deny - that **Scotland is a nation.** (SCOT250997)

Both these extracts use qualifying statements to emphasise the depth and rootedness of Scottish nationness. The first extract emphasises that Scotland is 'undoubtedly' a nation with 'a strong sense of national identity'. The second draws a distinction between a Scottish nation and Welsh principality. The third extract mentions that even the archetypal anti-devolutionist John Major does not deny the nationness of Scotland.

Whereas several extracts use constructive strategies by building an historic continuity between the Scottish people of 1707 and 1979/1997, the historic continuity does not necessarily have to make links to the past. Although strategy of 'rooting' the nation is popular in nationalist discourse, the *future* is just as important for nation-building, as already mentioned while discussing the role of deixis 'history':

> ... support for devolution depends not on calculation but on **faith and hope in the future of a small nation** whose character has undergone a quickening process of erosion. (SCOT030379)
>
> We have already said that we believe that normal life should continue and that it is entirely appropriate that this should happen while people mourn. We believe that the devolution campaign should continue in a dignified manner throughout this same period because it is of **great and lasting importance for the future of the nation,** but we do not in any way include witless political bile in a definition of normal life. (HERA040997)
>
> In the scant days left before polling we all have a duty to weigh these matters, and **to vote with our eyes firmly on the future of our nation.** (HERA080997)

The following extract uses the link with the past (1707) and the future together, constructing a historically expanded nation again:

> **Saying Yes to the future**
> The need now, above all, is for that passion which turns **the pages of history.** It is the passion which earned a small nation off on the northern fringes of Europe its name in the world. It is the passion of poets, scientists, engineers, entrepreneurs and statesmen. It is the thing that has kept Scotland's sense of

> itself intact for **nigh on three centuries** while other nations have been born, flickered briefly, and have gone.
> Now it requires only expression. The arguments are all but done. The questions which remain are two-fold and they turn on **Scotland's ability to say Yes to the future**. (SCOT080997)

And then there is the 'wandering nation'. The following extract uses the deixis 'nation' quite ambiguously:

> Decisions have already been taken about how **the nation** will pay its respects: close all the shops; play no spectator sports. **From a particularly Scottish perspective**, should another one have been taken: tape up the ballot boxes?
> [...]
> Our political leaders have decided that there should be only quiet activity this week, reviewed on a daily basis. At their best, they are astute at taking **the mood of the nation**, and such has been the emotional response to the Princess's death **throughout the land** that low-level campaigning was, it seems, the only realistic option. (HERA020997)

The first paragraph begins by using the concept to mean the 'British nation'. It then contrasts this to the Scottish nation by looking at the response to Princess Diana's death 'from a particularly Scottish perspective', talking about 'another' decision. This move can be interpreted both as contrasting 'Scotland' to 'nation/Britain', or as nesting the 'Scottish nation' within the 'British nation'. The second paragraph is just as ambiguous. 'Our political leaders' can mean both British and Scottish politicians. 'The mood of the nation' and 'throughout the land' can be understood both as Scottish and British. The end of the paragraph, however, refers to Scotland, as it mentions the 'low-level campaigning'.

8.2.3.2. British nation

The concept of the British nation is evoked in three main instances in Scottish media. Firstly, the British nation is evoked in the face of a (threatening) external Other. Secondly, the British nation is used when talking about 'British national' issues. Whereas Scottish newspapers seem to restrict the use of the word 'nation' to Scotland, the word 'national' remains often British/the UK. Thirdly, the British nation is evoked if something internal brings the 'nation' together.

British nation versus the external Other

Eriksen writes that 'contrasting is also politically important in more immediate ways. Polyethnic and class-divided Britain thus achieved a rare level of national cohesion during the Falklands/Malvinas war in 1982' (Eriksen 2004:57). The situation does not always need to be as extreme. Dealings with the European Union can also unify Britain. The following extracts show the British nation as united against an external Other – European Community:

> **The EEC is undoubtedly an object of popular hostility ...** But the real grievances about Europe are much more real. ... the truth is that **Britain** is getting a raw deal in Europe, in terms both of her financial contribution and some of **her essential national interests.** (SCOT100379)
>
> The single European currency is just one area where referendum dangers lie in wait. If, as seems likely, **the majority of European nations** go ahead with monetary union on time and if, as is possible, there are benefits for **Britain in joining them**, the proposed referendum could be a nightmare. (HERA200997)

In these extracts, the nation is British, as opposed to the European Community and 'other people' in Europe.

Scottish nation, British national

The British nation is often used when discussing 'British *national'* issues. Whereas Scottish newspapers seem to restrict the use of the word 'nation' to Scotland, the word 'national' remains often British.

> This week the EEC summit is due to inaugurate the European Monetary System, without the full participation of Britain. Many civil servants and politicians hope for its collapse sooner or later because it threatens **national control** of key economic instruments. (SCOT120379a)
>
> Mrs Thatcher's broadcast last night was judiciously low key, echoing Mr Callaghan's **appeal to national unity** but likewise replete with hints of electoral battles to come. (SCOT240379)
>
> The truth is perhaps not so startling. Our growth rate this year is expected to be just under that of the world; but it is true, as she [Mrs Thatcher] implies, that unless the country's wealth can grow at a rather faster rate then the pressures for its redistribution will keep building up. Perhaps that is why industrial conflict looms so large in **our national consciousness** (though the economic cost of strikes is small). (SCOT260379)

> The political position and strength which he enjoys, and his subtle and successful management of a moment of **apparent national crisis**, have combined to place Mr Blair at a point of influence which has not been paralleled since Mrs Thatcher was at her full and controversial height. (HERA090997)
>
> Dounreay may be a scientific mongrel, unloved by all outside the nuclear family, but it is also a political hybrid of a peculiar sort. As a nuclear plant the responsibility for ensuring that it does not blow up, and other sundry useful tasks, falls to **national government**, in particularly the Department of Trade and Industry. (HERA150997)
>
> Something had to give, and it did when council leader Robert Gould made his off-the-cuff remarks about votes for trips. With hindsight, it is now clear that he unwittingly provided **Labour's national leadership** with the excuse, if not the evidence, to take its crusade for probity into its heartland. (HERA250997)

Princess Diana effect

Again, the death of Princess Diana stretches the meaning of 'nation'. Almost overnight, all notions of Scottish nation have been replaced with the talks about British nation.

> The reaction of each one is different and the reaction of one individual is as important and valid as the reaction of any other. Because of this it is wrong, we believe, for the imposition of a particular state of mourning on **the nation**. (HERA030997)[43]
>
> Emotions of **a nation**: Perverse alchemists at work
> [...] Perverse alchemists are at work, fashioning their spells in reverse and, while we have known from the Middle Ages that base metal cannot be turned into gold, it seems that in terms of **the emotions of the nation** the opposite is entirely possible. This is not a comment on the genuine feelings of grief and loss felt by **large numbers of people throughout the nation** at the death of Diana, Princess of Wales. [...] Grappling with the display of emotion at the death of the Princess, some have sought to render it down by portraying it as some sort of sea-change in the behaviour of the people of Britain, a switch in **national habit** from traditional reserve to the free expression of feelings and emotions. Responsible for it, of course, is the poor, dead Princess herself through her willingness to talk openly and publicly about her many problems. This is utter and demeaning rubbish. It is demeaning because it denies **the well-springs of decency and emotion which have always existed in our nation** and it is rubbish because it suggests that a very controversial, if

[43] I recently came across a poem published in the *Black Dwarf* in London on Wednesday 2 December 1818 'On hearing of the death of Her Majesty'. Note the assumption that there is a certain 'particular state of mourning' that is expected from the nation:
Ah Me! What news is this I hear? / Alas? The say the *Queen* is dead! / Bless me! The *onions* will be dear, / For *tears* of *fashion* must be shed!

fascinating, figure had powers which would make Svengali blanch. (HERA040997)

It is reasonable to assume that the world will not end on Saturday as Diana, Princess of Wales is interred but there must be many people who wonder, in the light of the display of public emotion over her death, what has happened to our country and where we go from here. This is a uniquely difficult question to address. It is unlikely, as we said yesterday, that there has been a sea-change in **the nation from the sort of people** who bear emotion stoically to those who are able to display it publicly; from stiff upper lip to trembling lower lip. [...] Yet we must at least examine the possibility that a change of attitude has taken place which may, or may not, continue to filter through **the veins of the nation** in 10 or 20 years. [...] There is nothing wrong with change and, heaven knows, **the nation** longed for political change in May. (HERA050997a)

Just as with 'we' and 'people', the death of Princess Diana widens the scope of the deixis 'nation'.

8.2.4. Country

Lastly, 'country' is another national deixis, aiming to build and/or fortify a nation-state (Kamusella 1999). The word is ambiguous. It can function as a synonym for 'nation', or it can function as a synonym for 'rural' (Rosie *et al.* 2004:443). The use of the deixis 'country' in the Scottish media is again very varied, but usually it is used to mean 'nation'. The deixis 'country' can again refer to Scotland or Britain. Here are few examples of the Scottish 'country' – curiously, mostly from the *Herald*:

Those Scots who wish for an end to those advantages, for a complete separation of **their country from England**, should certainly vote "Yes." (HERA260279)

The real question - whether we still believe in the power of government to create an inclusive civic culture which can, with vision and determination, enhance **a small country's** performance and improve the lives of its people - goes on begging for an answer. (HERA200897)

The polling organisations have a hard task on their hands when they try to make sense of the various currents of opinion swirling **around the country** and one of the few certainties is that any poll conducted by telephone is unlikely to be even remotely accurate. (HERA270897)

With his long arms and legs Mr Dewar is the very mould of a one-man band, able to pull strings, bang drums, and tweak cymbals simultaneously and he has done this to excellent political effect **around the country.** (HERA280897)

By the end of this week Scotland will have faced the challenge of creative constitutional change; of grasping the opportunity to take control of our own domestic affairs within the framework of a united kingdom. By all sensible measures of opinion it seems likely that **the country** will embrace the opportunity to have a devolved parliament with law-making powers over those aspects of day-to-day life which affect everyone. (HERA080997)

There has been a debate, and what a debate! It has been lively, informed, passionate, sometimes downright abusive but never boring. It has poured in from **every corner of the country**, and from abroad through readers of the electronic Herald on the Internet. (HERA110997)

Every region in Scotland voted for the devolved parliament, although Orkney and Dumfries and Galloway were nervous about tax-varying powers.
Despite that, the vote in Scotland showed a heartening level of agreement right **across the country**. (HERA160997)

Note how the last three extract emphasise the unanimity of the (projected) referendum decision. Here are some examples of the British 'country':

The assembly is bound to mean a step into the unknown; and constitutional change, particularly in **a country with no written constitution,** is bound to be messy. (HERA130279)

It is easy to see how the position arose. The parties are the normal vehicle for the expression of political opinion and broadcasting time is allocated to them more or less automatically on a formula related to their **voting strength in the country**. (HERA170279)

Mrs Thatcher is gathering her skirts about her, ready for the fray. In a speech on Saturday she gave us some inkling of the line she will be pursuing in an election campaign. Such is the stagnation of the economy that she does not have to try too hard to paint a picture of **a country gripped** in Socialist-induced lethargy. But the grammar of adversary politics demand that she express this in more dramatic terms. Therefore Britain is bound for the scrap heap. [...] The truth is perhaps not so startling. Our growth rate this year is expected to be just under that of the world; but it is true, as she implies, that unless **the country's wealth** can grow at a rather faster rate then the pressures for its redistribution will keep building up. (SCOT260379)

Their jockeying for power has had its entertaining moments, but generally it has had the effect of **reassuring the country** that one or the other has been in charge and making decisions - with one glaring exception. (HERA190897)

Again, one can trace so-called 'Princess Diana effect' in the media – the death of Princess of Wales expands the notion of the 'country':

> Nevertheless there is a balance to be struck and we return to our original point about the suspension of reality. We are not mourning the death of someone close to us in the same way a member of our families would be close. It is important to be honest and to acknowledge that there are many people **in the country** who, although saddened by the needless death of a fellow human being, do not feel the need to mourn deeply. (HERA030997)
>
> If the alchemists are bad the commissars of grief are every bit as troubling. People must be allowed to grieve for Princess Diana however they want. It is wrong for them to be shunted into emotional straitjackets by those who believe that they know best, who want to **shut down the entire country** on Saturday for what they conceive of as a properly reverential farewell. (HERA040997)

If devolution is a very Scottish affair (with consequences for the whole of UK though), then after Diana's death all these concepts – nation, country – were stretched, to encompass the whole of Britain into one 'we' in this moment of commemoration and sadness.

8.3. Concluding remarks

Considering the complexity of identifications in Scotland, it would be wrong to say that deictic notions like 'we', 'nation(al)', 'country', 'people' etc. in the media automatically mean 'British', as could be expected from the 'mission statements' (i.e. leader articles) of Scottish national newspapers (i.e. *The Scotsman* and *The (Glasgow) Herald*) in the context of a major national event (i.e. devolution referenda), if one takes Billig's banal nationalism as the starting point. But it would be equally wrong to assume that the media always addresses its readers as Scottish. The use of deictic notions in the Scottish media is much more complex and depends heavily on the context. But so is the issue of identity in Scotland in general. According to various public opinion polls, the majority of Scots prioritise being Scottish (Bond and Rosie 2002). But although Scottishness is highlighted over Britishness, there is an element of Britishness present, as 'to Scots … national and state identities are distinct, and in that order, but not antithetical to one another' (McCrone 2002:304). One could say, that this is reflected in the media. Or – maybe it is the other way around? We are back to the chicken and egg question of the media sociologist and discourse analysts – is the (media) discourse constitutive of society, or does it constitute society?

9. Scottishness in political cartoons

Chapter Five explained the approach to analysing visual materials, and chapter 6 the role of political cartoons and political humour in general. This chapter discusses the presentation of Scottish devolution and identity in political cartoons, and analyses political cartoons as an arena for the discursive construction of Scottish national identity. A sample of cartoons was drawn from the same two time frames as the textual data corpus. The corpus includes 86 political cartoons from a wide range of Scottish and British newspapers, both broadsheets and tabloids, providing an opportunity to compare the coverage of Scottish devolution between, crudely put, left- and right-wing newspapers, between various media organisations and across different formats.

I have not, thus far, come across any other studies of political cartoons and devolution, or Scottish politics, so this research is mainly exploratory. Indeed, I did not set out to look at political cartoons when I began my research and data collection. But while I was analysing leader articles, it became increasingly clear that comment and opinion was contained as much in cartoons as in leader articles, and therefore it made sense to look at the political cartoons, as well as consider the links between the visual and textual comment. While the leader articles present the anonymous corporate view of the newspaper (Seymour-Ure 1997:586), the editorial cartoon is often somewhat less the representation of the newspaper's point of view than the cartoonists. One of my interviewees at the Guardian explained that newspaper's cartoonist, Steve Bell

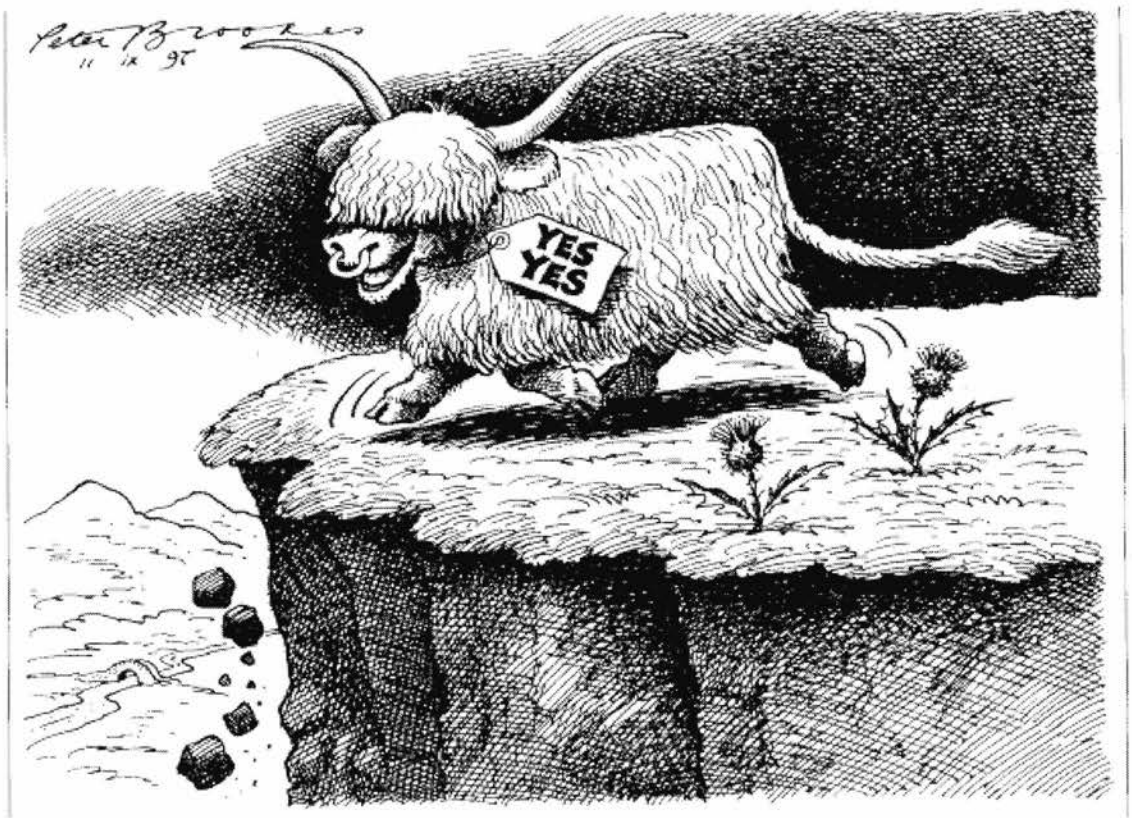
> comes up to the office to draw cartoons and he attends the Party conferences. He's a good example of the freedom that *The Guardian* has. He draws actually outrageous cartoons that are going to offend people and the Editor will look at them and he'll shiver but he lets them go through. (Interview 10)

The extract implies that cartoonists have relatively free hands in their choice of topics for daily cartoons. However, Brinkman suggested that it is in the interest of the editor to 'control' the cartoonist, as cartoons and editorials presented together are more effective in bringing about opinion change than either one of them alone. They are

especially powerful if they propose similar arguments (Brinkman 1968). This suggests that the majority of the cartoons in my data corpus would be related to the same topic as the leader article on that day; and probably also put forward the same main argument.

Secondly, the literature on political cartoons suggests several 'typical' thematic sources for editorial cartoons. Cartoons often have 'their targets are in the field of political or public affairs, but they may be social customs, fashions, or sports events or personalities' (Low and Williams 2000). Personification 'of one kind or another, notably the personification of the nations in the shape of John Bull and Uncle Sam and the Russian Bear, forms the very alphabet of political caricature of the present day' (Maurice and Cooper 2000). I expect that many cartoons will be 'personalised' in the sense that they focus on personalities involved in the Scottish devolution referenda.

Thirdly, McCrone *et al.* discuss the 'tartanisation' of Scottish culture, and find that there is 'no shortage of Scottish iconography; if anything, it is too overwhelming. It appears in films, novels, poems, paintings, photographs, as well as on shortbread tins' (1999:49). In its pursuit of difference from England, Scotland has preferred 'a Celtic and Gaelic definition' and this has lead to 'the extraordinary efflorescence of Highland and Gaelic imagery in the self-presentation and assumed genealogy of modern Scotland' (Chapman 1978:92; cited in McCrone *et al.* 1999:57). While Wigston, who analysed the representation of Aids in South African political cartoons, had to look for indexical and symbolic signs alone instead of iconic signs, as there was no readily available iconic sign to represent the disease (Wigston 2002), I expected to find a wide variety of 'tartanised iconography of Scotland' in my data. As an example of a widely tartanised cartoon, consider the following cartoon published in the *Times* on the day of the 1997 devolution referendum:



Cartoon 67. Published in *The Times* on 11 September 1997

Simple iconographic reading of the cartoon reveals the supposedly Scottish icons of the Highland Cow, thistle, and the Highland mountains. More thorough reading suggests that the Highland cow, blinded by its hairy coat, is about to run over the cliff. The implied message here is that the Scots are about to fall as well. Indeed, Magnus Linklater, a well-known columnist and the former editor of the *Scotsman,* wrote in an article adjacent to the cartoon that

> Scotland will vote today in a spirit of optimism and adventure rather than pessimism and caution. It has listened to the stark warnings about its great constitutional experiment, and if the polls are anything to go by – has decided to risk it anyway. (TIME110998)

Although Linklater's comments are quite kind and optimistic, combined with the cartoon, the message is that the Scots are somewhat reckless and experimental, ignoring the 'stark warnings' (possibly in the form of the stormy clouds on the cartoon). The following cartoon from the *Daily Express* on the day of the 1997 devolution referendum is also using a wide array of supposedly Scottish iconography:



Cartoon 70. Caption: "Aye, Hamish, Maggie warned of an English backlash!" Published in *The Express* on 11 September 1997

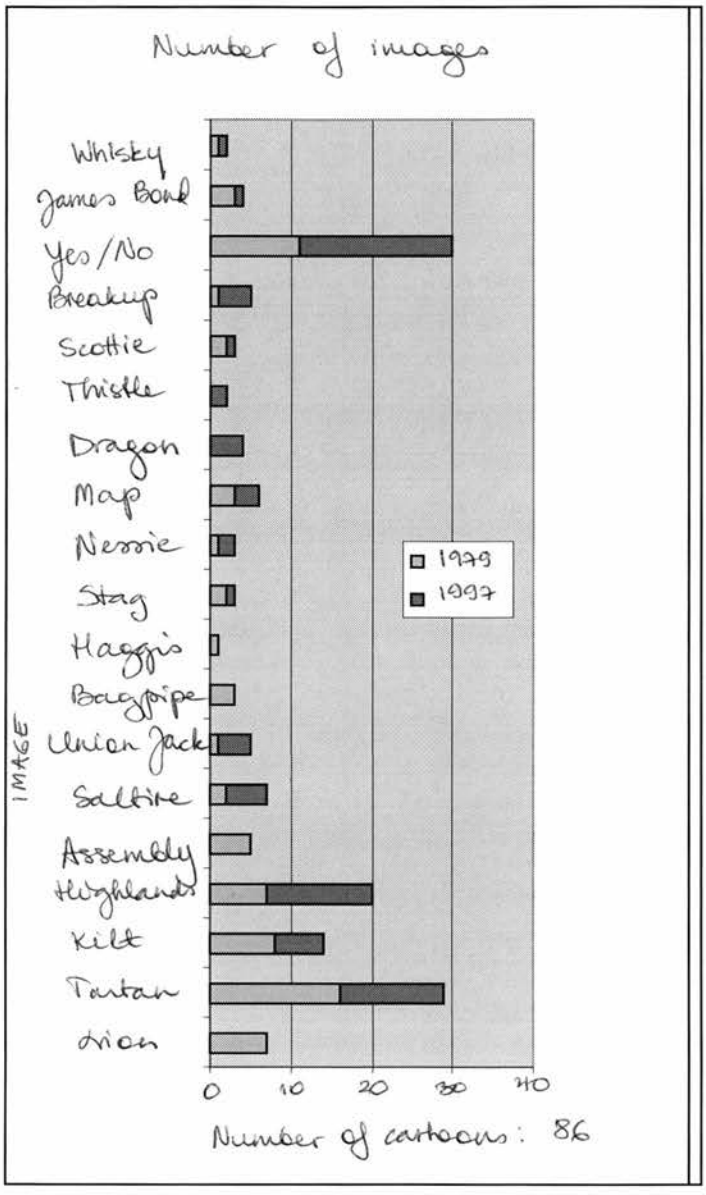
This time we have an image of the Hadrian's Wall (depicting, falsely, the geographical border between Scotland and England), sheep, the Highlands, and the Scottish shepherds in kilt. On the other side, across the dividing wall, we can see the Union Jack.

9.1. Analysis of cartoons

Brinkman (1968) suggested that cartoons can be influential and bring about greater opinion change, if presented together with the editorials. And *vice versa* – the leader articles accompanied by a cartoon result in greater opinion change, especially when if the cartoon presents similar arguments as the editorial. I compared all cartoons with the leader article/major opinion article on the given day and found that the cartoon almost always illustrates – and thus reflects - the topic of the main editorial comment, although not necessarily the leader article itself. Not all cartoons were on the same topic as the leader article, nor were they always published next to the leader article. Often the editorial cartoon appeared on the front page, usually next to a major opinion piece, whereas the leader article is usually inside the paper. On a few occasions, there

was more than one cartoon in the same newspaper on any given day, reflecting different main articles. Thus, the potential of the cartoons under the study to be socially constitutive and bring about opinion change is quite considerable – provided that the audience understands the cartoons in the way the cartoonist and editorial intended.

The analysis of political cartoons in this thesis is informed by the grounded approach. Based on the initial reading of the cartoons, it focuses on the topics covered, persons depicted, and the use of Scottish iconography in the editorial cartoons. In the following I will be looking at various icons and themes depicted in political cartoons. The categories under study were based on the following criteria: if the same image was used in two or more cartoons in the cartoon data corpus, a separate category was created for that image. 18 images were coded more than once, resulting in a separate category. There is definitely no shortage of Scottish iconography – the whole Scottish iconography was used in the cartoons: tartan, Nessie, thistle, kilts, heather, haggis, Highland cattle, Saltire, Highlands, whisky, lion. The stereotypical Scottish icons are widely used in the available population of cartoons (i.e. cartoons from all newspapers collected from the same time periods as leader articles):



As we can see, about one third of cartoons are 'tartanised', and 17 per cent of cartoonists have literally 'put the kilt on' their cartoon. The Highlands and the Saltire were other widely used images. In 1979 the *Glasgow Herald's* cartoonist Turnbull popularised a Rampant Lion to represent the people of Scotland. The non-Scottish papers published cartoons using a much wider variety of 'Scottish iconography', including the Scottish terrier, grouse, thistle, sheep, Edinburgh Castle etc.

I will look at some of the sources of the imagery used in cartoons below, as this will help us understand the popularity and (intended) meaning of these images.

The Highlands

A lot of the 'Scottish icons' in cartoons – the mountains and glens, the sheep, the Nessie, the kilt, tartan, thistle, etc. – can grouped under the common denominator – the Highlands. Although today Scotland has symbolically appropriated the Highlands, this is a recent development. When

> the Highlands did become part of the vocabulary in the medieval period, it was in response to a need to isolate and distinguish a part of Scotland that differed in cultural and social terms from the rest. A crucial difference was linguistic for, as Gaelic retreated from the Lowlands, the 'Highlands' became more culturally distinctive and linguistically separate from other parts of the kingdom. (Devine 1999:231)

Using a classic Gellnerian term, the Highlanders were the Ruritarians of Scotland at the time (Gellner 1983). The Highlanders and their culture were seen by the Lowland Scots as inferior and dangerous, and therefore 'had to be assimilated to the social and cultural norms that prevailed in the rest of Scotland' (Devine 1999:232). The popular attitudes towards the Highlanders were far from positive and friendly:

> There was a long tradition of anti-Highland satire in both Lowland poetry and song which can be traced back into the Middle Ages. ... caricatured the Gael as stupid, violent, comic, feckless and filthy. ... The Highlander also inhabited a physical world of desolation, barrenness and ugliness; and to the Lowland mind, before the revolution in aesthetic taste of the later eighteenth century, the north of Scotland was both inhospitable and threatening' (Devine 1999:232)

Thus for a long time the Highlanders were the negative Other for the 'mainstream' Lowland and Central Belt Scots. This began to change in the middle of eighteenth century. Chapman describes in *The Gaelic Vision of Scottish Culture* how the Highlanders and their culture, previously considered inferior, became gradually appropriated by Lowland Scots[44]. While until the middle of the eighteenth century 'the Highlands had been invested with the symbolism or the exotic, the foreign,' by the end of that century 'all of Scotland was being colonised by that sign' (McCrone

[44] The Gaelic appropriation and the invention of the Highland tradition are extensively covered elsewhere (Chapman 1978; Trevor-Roper 1983; Womack 1989; McCrone 1992, 2001a; Devine 1999).

2001a:40). Today the Highlands are considered emblematic for 'real Scotland' and are used symbolically as 'metaphors of the nation' (Eriksen 1992:64). There 'is the added irony that the Highlands provide many of the images and meanings for Scotland as a whole in the late twentieth century. In cultural terms, its imagery dominates' (McCrone 2001a:67). As Chapman wrote,

> We are faced with the problem that a language not understood by 98% of the Scottish people, with a modern literary tradition that only begins to assume importance in the late 18th century and is still very small ... and spoken by a people who have been regarded for centuries by their southern neighbours as barbarians should now be regarded as the quintessence of Scottish culture. (1978:12)

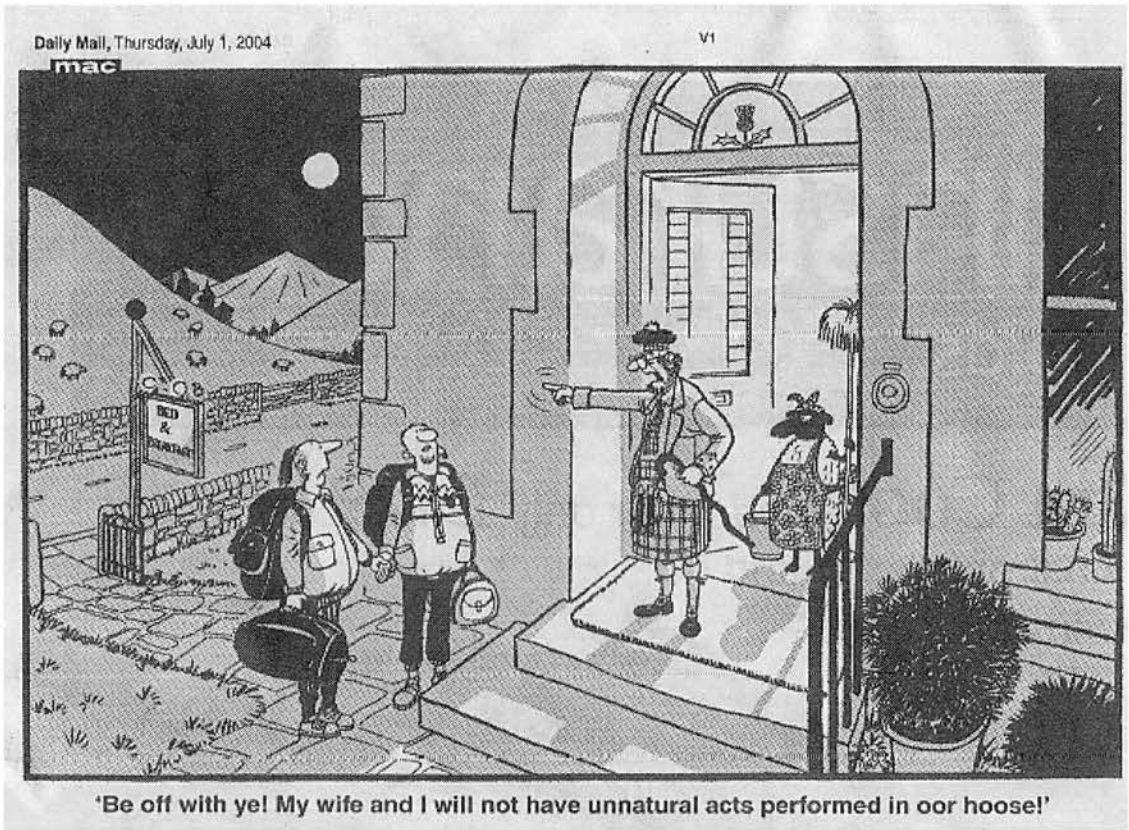
Consider the following cartoon:



Cartoon 88. Published in the *Daily Telegraph* in August 1994

Peter Womack conceded in his *Improvement and Romance: Constructing the Myth of the Highlands,* that 'the Highlands acquired the role of representing Scotland *for the English'* (1989:148). This is clearly obvious in the above cartoon from an 'English' newspaper. The Scottish iconography is used to the full: a dour and unsmiling Scotsman in a kilt, the national 'flower' the thistle, the Highlands, the stag (reminiscent of the Monarch of the Glen painting by Sir Edwin Landseer). Although Highland imagery is often used in Scottish cartoons, they are even more common in cartoons published south of the Border. Indeed, the Highlands have become to

represent Scotland for the English (Womack 1989). Again, consider the following, more recent political cartoon from a British tabloid:



Cartoon 234. Published in the *Daily Mail* on 1 July 2994.

The cartoon illustrates the news story about a Highland guesthouse owner Mr Forrest who refused a gay couple a double room, labelling them 'sexual deviants'. The cartoon uses the Highland imagery of the glens and mountains, thistle, sheep and the man in kilt. Again, the cartoon is quite outrageous, and the message would be unacceptable if spelled out in words. The above cartoon is from a London-based tabloid *The Daily Mail*, hence the cartoon can be said to represent Scotland for the English readership through the Highland imagery. Interestingly though, the very same cartoon was published in the Scottish edition of *Daily Mail.* One could hence argue that the cartoon depicts the Highlands alone, and is not an example of the Scottish appropriation of the Highlands. The way the cartoonist has chosen to depict guesthouse owners gives the cartoon a very anti-Highlands feel and could thus be seen as an example of negative othering of the Highlands (internal Other). In this case it seems that the anti-Highland satire mentioned by Devine is not extinct yet.

Flags

Flags are one of the important icons expressing nationness and they have been used for centuries as markers of identity (see Billig 1995; McCrone 1998:41; Dunkerley *et al.* 2002:53). 'States increasingly began to use flags in the medieval period,' and 'the flag of Denmark, the *Dannebrog* ('Danish Cloth') is the oldest national flag in continuous usage' (Dunkerley *et al.* 2002:53)[45]. Flags are widely used in political cartoons, as they are handy markers of identity. In the cartoon below, the Queen wears a hat and a handbag with the Union Jack, symbolising 'a strong sense of British national and imperial identity' (McCrone 2001a:113). The Prime Minister, though, flashes a Saltire under his kilt:



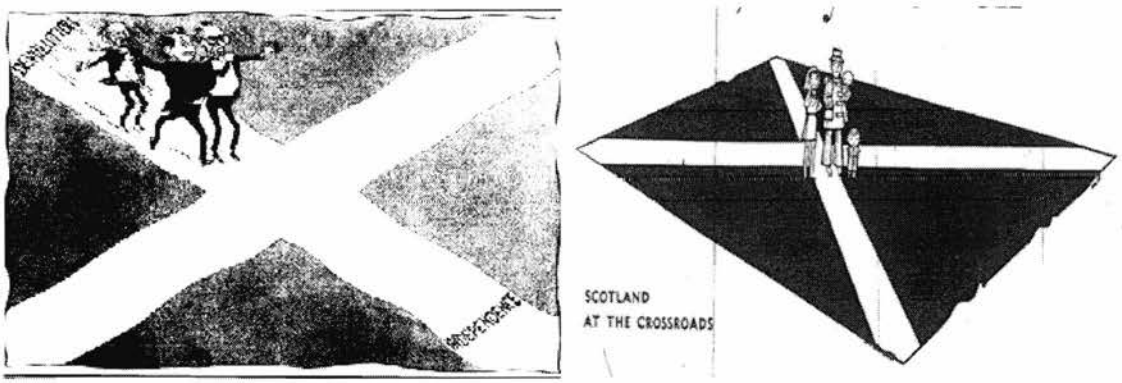
Cartoon 123. Published in *The Express on Sunday* on 27 July 1997

Flashing the Saltire under the kilt was depicted on at least three cartoons in July 1997. The Labour Party's announcement about plans for devolution referendum is in this way pictured as something shocking, unexpected, surprising, possibly even unacceptable.

The Saltire, national flag of Scotland, depicts the cross of St Andrew, Scotland's saint. The meaning of the Saltire for its users can vary. 'To Scottish Nationalists, flying the Saltire ... may signify a counter-nationalism to that of the British state, whereas to Unionists it implies that being Scottish and being British are complementary not

[45] *Dannebrog* dates back to the thirteenth century when it allegedly fell from the Heavens during the 1219 battle of Lindanise (former name of my hometown Tallinn) between 'Danes' and 'Estonians'.

competing identities' (McCrone 1998:41). In the cartoons, it often symbolises Scotland:



Cartoon 117. Published in *Daily Telegraph* on 25 July 1997 (left). Cartoon 24. Published in the *Scotsman* on 1 March 1979 (right)

Of course, just as the meaning of the Saltire for its users can vary, the Union Jack can have very different connotations:



Cartoon 71. Published in the *Guardian* on 11 September 1997

If on cartoon 123 (previous page) the Union Jack could be interpreted as representing a more or less 'neutral' British identity, then on this cartoon it represents Britain in a negative sense. Margaret Thatcher, the epitome of the No No camp, brandishing Union Jack on her face, is depicted as a scary figure, the negative Other.

Buildings

Various buildings can be used metonymically in cartoons. The new parliament building was described as 'a symbol for all of Scotland' (SCOT300997), 'a national symbol' (SCOT230997) in a number of leader articles. Here the symbolic building is the Royal High School:



Cartoon 21. Published in the *Glasgow Herald* on 28 February 1979

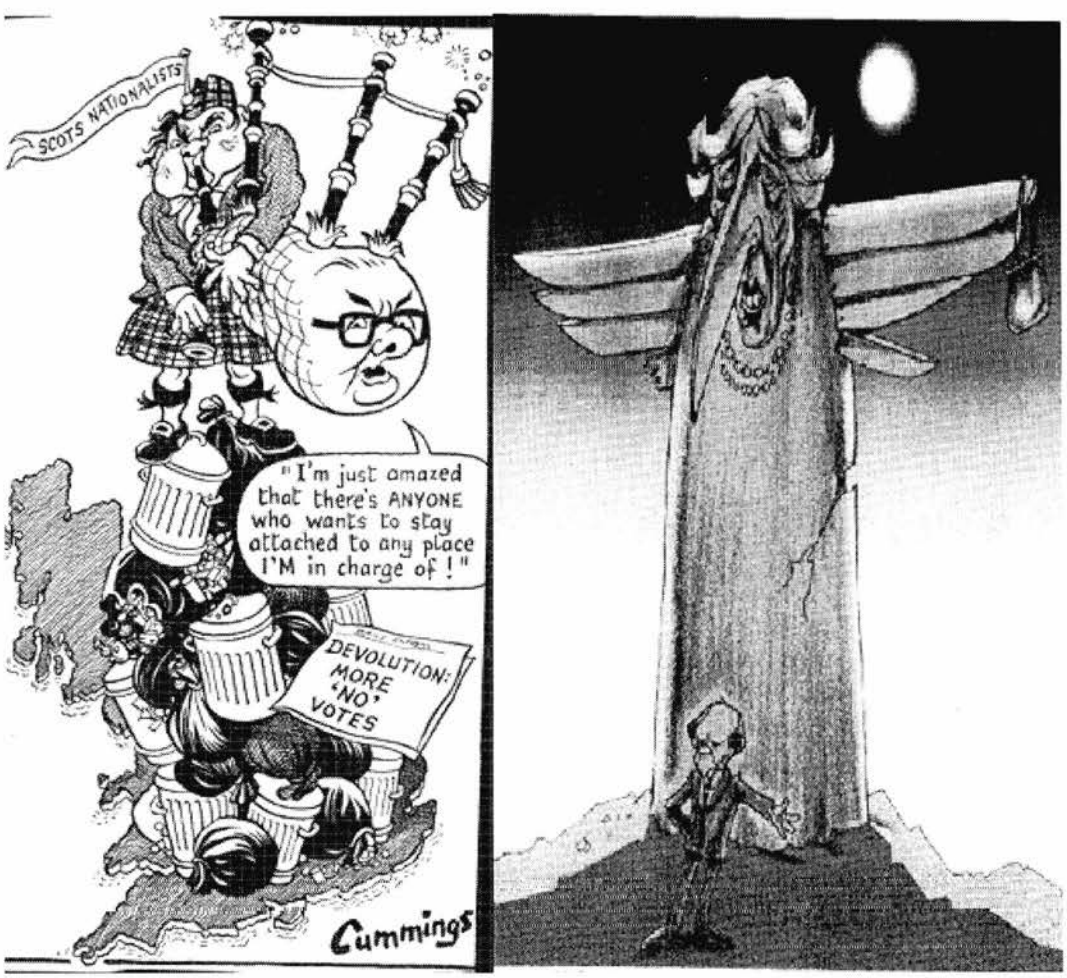
Again, the above cartoon is pregnant with Scottish iconography. Apart from the metonymic use of Assembly building, the cartoon also depicts the indecisive lion, singing Nessie and Haggis, all in the foreground of the Highland mountains.

Personifications

As said above, there are 'typical' topics for editorial cartoons, and various personifications are one of them. The table below shows the politicians that appeared in cartoons more than once during the two time frames:

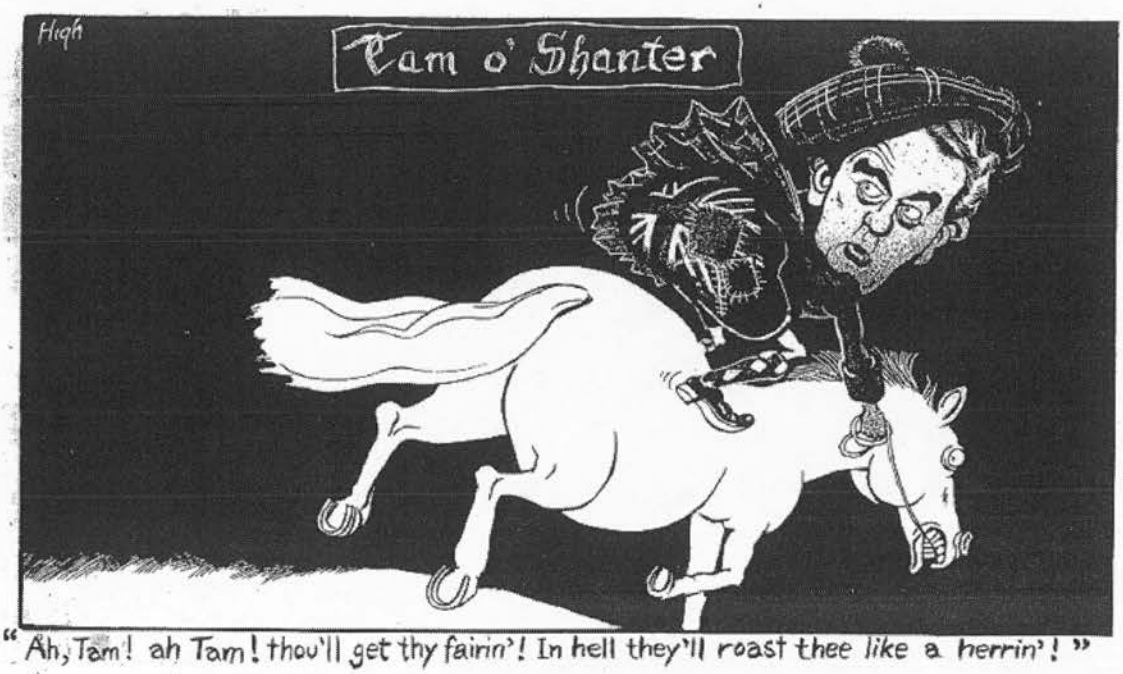
Person	1979	1997	Total
Callaghan, James	15	-	15
Blair, Tony	-	13	13
Dewar, Donald	-	11	11
Thatcher, Margaret	-	6	6
Foot, Michael	6	-	6
Dalyell, Tam	3	3	6
Hague, William	-	3	3
Macdonald, Margo	3	-	3
Healey, Dennis	3	-	3
Wilson, Harold	2	-	2
Prescott, John	-	2	2

Depictions of politicians are rather colourful. For example, on cartoons below, Callaghan is depicted as a bagpipe, Thatcher as a monument:



Cartoon 23.Cartoon by Michael Cummings. Published in *Daily Express* on 28 February 1979 (left). Cartoon 63. Caption 'Minority sect hold bizarre eve of poll ceremony'. Published in the *Herald* on 10 September 1997 (right)

Note that Prime Ministers appear frequently on cartoons in both data sets. A prominent Scottish politician Donald Dewar is also present in 1997, followed by Home Secretary Michael Foot in 1979 and former MP Thatcher in 1997. And whereas Margaret Thatcher does play an important role in the period leading up to and following the 1979 devolution referendum, she is curiously absent from the first data set (however, she appears often in cartoons preceding the 1979 devolution referendum). The only politician to span the two time frames on cartoons is Tam Dalyell.



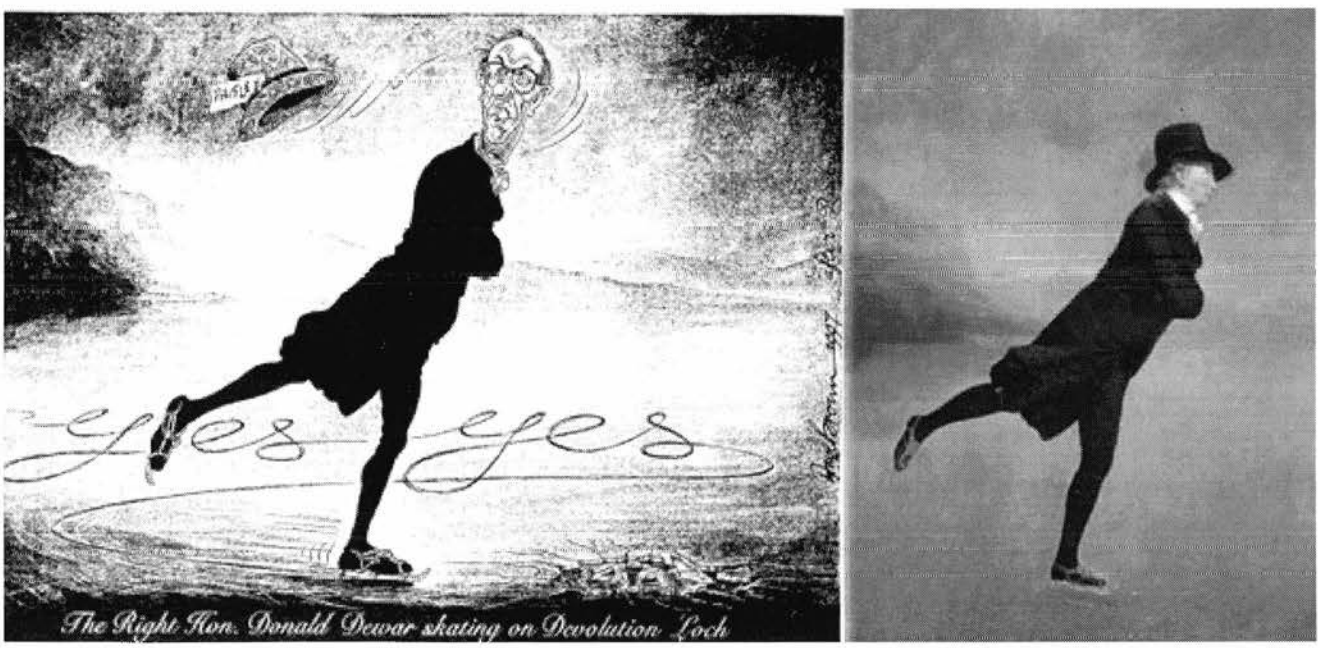
Cartoon 49. Published in the *Scotsman* on 28 August 1997

Copying 'high art'

Although cartoons in general do not aim at being high art (Wigston 2002:76), the cartoonists happily use 'history and cultural comparisons are another common source of imagery' (Seymour-Ure 1998a:3). Although popular, so-called 'copycat cartoons' should be drawn with care by cartoonists. Maurice & Cooper warn that

> the best type of caricature should not require a high degree of intelligence. Many clever cartoonists overreach themselves by an excess of cleverness, appealing at best to a limited audience. Of this type are the cartoons whose point lies in parodying some famous painting or a masterpiece of literature, which, as a result, necessarily remains caviar to the general [audience]. (2000)

Wigston, who analysed the representation of AIDS in South African cartoons, agrees that unless the reader has a knowledge of a particular painting parodied in the cartoon, 'the whole argument put forward in the cartoon is missed' (Wigston 2002:92). There were a number of cartoons in my data corpus that are parodying some famous paintings or a masterpiece of film, and thus can remain 'a caviar to the general'. Consider the following cartoon from *The Independent*:



Cartoon 47. Published in The Independent on 21 August 1997 (left)
Sir Henry Raeburn (1784) The Reverend Robert Walker Skating on Duddingston Loch. Oil on canvas, National Gallery of Scotland, Edinburgh (right)

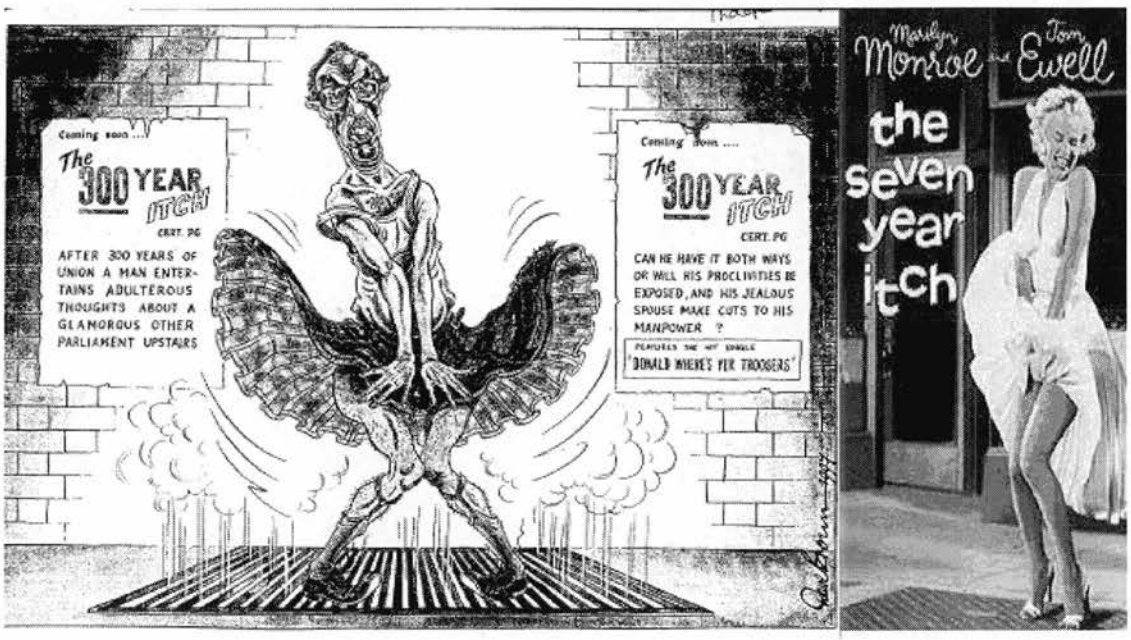
The cartoon depicts Donald Dewar skating on a lake. On the first instance the cartoon does not say much – we can see that Mr Dewar is supporting the Yes-Yes campaign, that there is 'Paisley'[46] written over the hat, swept off by the wind, and that Dewar is just about to skate onto a thin broken ice. The cartoon is based on a famous picture by Sir Henry Raeburn (1756-1823). This is a particularly *Scottish* image, e.g. also the symbol of the National Gallery of Scotland. Dewar looks rather sour, and thus reflects the bleak landscape behind him. As the CartoonHub comments,

> What should have been a triumphant demonstration of cross-party unity with Donald Dewar, Liberal Democrat Menzies Campbell and Scottish Nationalist, Alex Salmond at a meeting on the forthcoming referendum on devolution

[46] See the footnote in section 6.3.4. on Paisley crisis.

resulted in questions from the floor which were persistently about the death by suicide of the Labour MP for Paisley, Gordon McMaster. (CartoonHub, PC2436)

The same cartoonist, Dave Brown, is the author of another art-inspired cartoon, above. This time the source of inspiration is a movie poster for *The Seven Year Itch* by Billy Wilder (20th Century Fox, 1955).

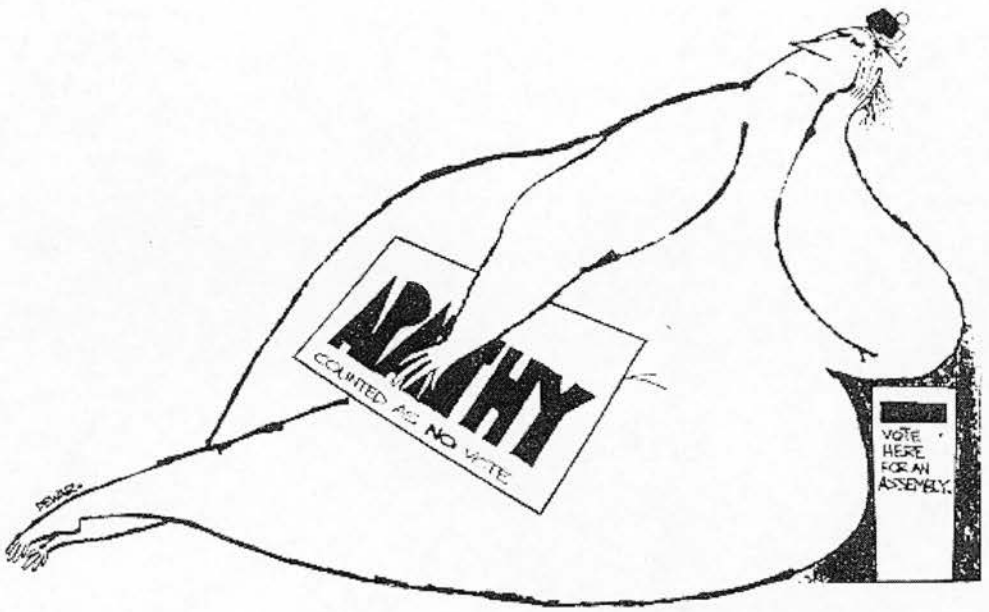


Cartoon 118. Published in *The Independent* on 25 July 1997 (left)

The cartoon depicts Donald Dewar, while looking like Marilyn Monroe, in the role of Richard Sherman, the itchy protagonist, whose imagination gets the better of him at the end of the movie. Although one can make sense of the cartoon looking at the image and reading the caption alone, it gets a different meaning if one is familiar with the movie.

Apathy

In 1979, the *topos* of apathy was very common in leader articles, and apathy was an inspiration for a number of political cartoons. Here is an oversized lady who, despite leaning on the polling booth, cannot be bothered to cast her vote. It is also warning the readers that no-vote equals to No-vote at the referendum because of the 40% requirement.



Cartoon 3. Published in the *Scotsman* on 13 February 1979

Following the apathy theme, Turnbull drew a series of cartoons with the indecisive and confused lion for the *Glasgow Herald* in 1979. The next two cartoons depict the apathy among the Scots. In both cases the lion, symbolising the people of Scotland, cannot make up its mind:



Cartoon 13. Published in the *Glasgow Herald* on 24 February 1979

On the cartoon above the lion looks unable to make up his mind as he is burdened by the Apathy's ball and chain and the wounded pride from the failed World Cup football campaign in Argentina. The same *topos* of indecisiveness is depicted in the next cartoon. No amount of dancing, singing and bagpipe playing on behalf of Callaghan can induce the Lion to choose and make up his mind:



Cartoon 19. Published in the *Glasgow Herald* on 27 February 1979

The lion is still confused, despite all Callaghan's efforts (latter wearing a kilt and covered in campaign slogans). The cartoon on the front page of the *Glasgow Herald* on the 1979 devolution referendum day is full of optimism:



Cartoon 24. Published in the *Glasgow Herald* on 1 March 1979

The Lion, this time dressed in full kilt, is proudly stepping over the No-field of the ballot paper, heading towards the polling station. The cartoon is full of optimism and hope. But devolution was not to happen in 1979:



Cartoon 30. Published in the *Glasgow Herald* on 3 March 1979

The last cartoon shows the post-referendum mood. The Lion's head does not know what his heart is doing, as well as the rest of the body. Such personification metaphors are quite popular among cartoonists, as it allows to depict a non-human (lion) with human characteristics (indecisiveness, bravery), resulting in anthropomorphisation of the Lion (see Wodak *et al.* 1999:44). However, the Lion was absent from political cartoons in 1997. One possible explanation is that the lion was re-appropriated by the English in 1990s – think of the Three Lions and 1996 Football World Cup.

Renewal, rebirth and change

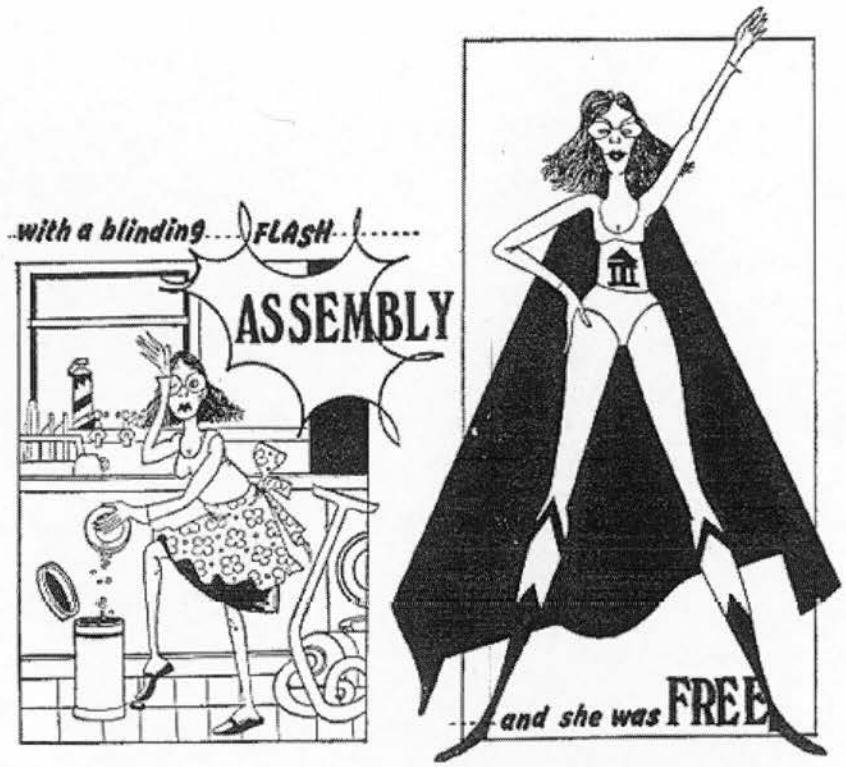
Chapter 7 mentioned that many headlines contained evolutionary metaphors: The *rebirth of a nation* (SCOT110997), and *The first day of a new life* (SCOT130997). Especially the second one gives a lot of promise of a bright future ahead - the use of 'first' and 'new' indicate a change from the (Westminster-dominated) past. Compare these birth-metaphors with Bill McArthur's cartoon on the referendum day in *The Herald*. The cartoon shows three men – one is wearing a kilt, symbolising his Scottishness, and Tony Blair and Donald Dewar as midwives. The Scottish man in a kilt is seemingly about to give birth:



Cartoon 68. Published in the *Herald* on 11 September 1997

Ironically, the iconographic reading of the cartoon raises more doubts about the birth of a new Scottish nation than promises. The fact that the person in labour is a man obviously means that anatomically, there can be no baby at all. Donald Dewar and his bowl of soapy water can mean that the baby might be thrown out with the bath water – and possibly hinting to the oft-heard accusation that the whole devolution is in the interests of Labour politicians and not the Scottish nation. Finally, considering that the mother-to-be is actually a man with a hairy beard, wobbly knees and slightly drunken expression, one is triggered to think of Mary Shelley's Frankenstein, of a monster giving birth – or a man depicted giving birth to a monster. And it can always be a stillbirth. Under the humorous caricature, several doubts and questions are lurking. It is also interesting to note how the cartoonist implies that the devolution would be necessary for the birth of the Scottish *nation*, as if it did not exist before. Although Anderson writes that nations 'have no clearly identifiable births, and their deaths, if they ever happen, are never natural' (Anderson 1991:205), the cartoonist is tentatively trying to record the exact time and place of the birth of the Scottish nation. This issue of 'biological' birth takes us back to the 1995 Warwick debates between Anthony D. Smith and Ernest Gellner and to latter's question whether nations have navels or not.

Another sub-theme is using the strategy of transformation. A number of cartoons depicted the proposed changes (to the better) that the devolution would bring. The cartoon below uses the Superman image:



Cartoon 6. Published in the *Scotsman* on 19 February 1979.

Accompanying an article on women's rights, the cartoon shows how a hard-working housewife suddenly turns into a Superwoman. As if all the mundane troubles of Scotland would disappear with devolution (note the image of the Assembly building on the Superwoman's outfit).

Maps and break-up of Britain?

Nations are not places as such, but metaphorical places and maps that provide 'everyday abstract image of the nation' (Eriksen 2004:59). This makes maps a powerful medium of banal nationalism, and they are popular in cartoons. This is not surprising:

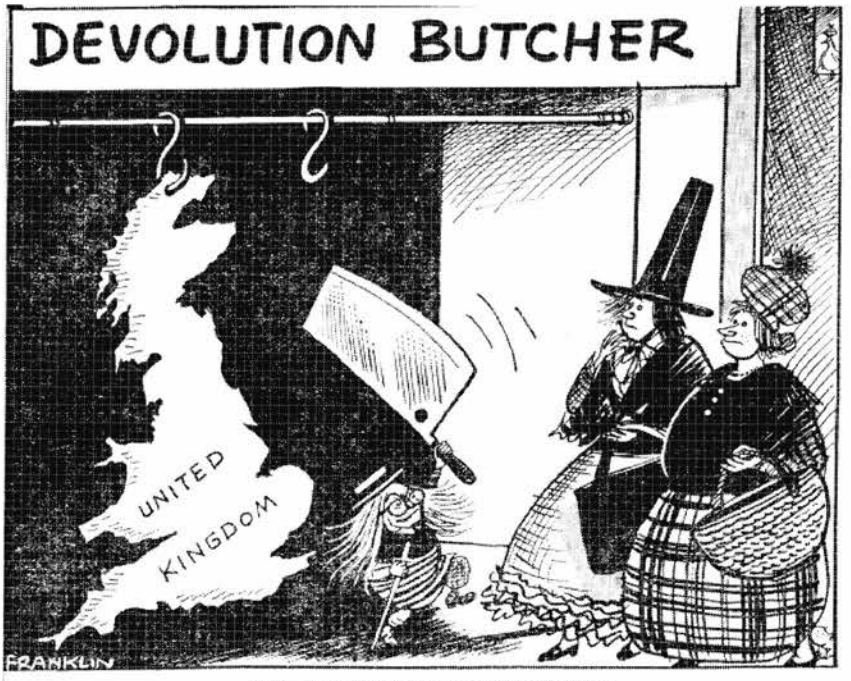
> Benedict Anderson has pointed out that in the modern world we have grown very used to recognising the geographical silhouette of the country to which we belong. Indeed, it comes in the shape of badges, on national stamps, sports emblems and so on. The everydayness and implicitness of the emblem reinforces our identity with it, and we learn to recognise it from atlases, weather maps, etc. (McCrone 1998:41)

A number of cartoons use maps, especially broken maps to imply that devolution may result in the possible break-up of Britain. Here is one cartoon from pre- referenda era:



Cartoon 177. Published in the *Spectator* (date unknown)

The cartoon shows Scotland being cut off from the rest of the United Kingdom with scissors –implying a possible break-up of Britain. The next cartoon is from the British tabloid on the day of the 1979 devolution referendum. It shows the map of Britain as a rump of meat hanging at a butchers, and Michael Foot as a butcher offering a piece of it to a Welsh and Scottish lady, dressed in respective 'national' costumes:



Cartoon 27. Published in the *Sun* on 1 March 1979

The next two cartoons show a physical gap between Scotland and the rest of Britain:



Cartoon 57. Published in the *Times* on 8 September 1997

Making a reference to the death of Princess Diana ('the past week has seen a truly heartfelt uniting of the whole kingdom' – for a discussion on the effect of Princess Diana's death on widening the scope of the deictic nation see Chapter 8), Cartoon 57 shows Scotland as a chunk of land separated from the rest of British Isles.



Cartoon 80. Published in the *Sunday Telegraph* on 14 September 1997

Cartoon 80 depicts Tony Blair with a victorious grin after the 1997 devolution referendum. In addition to the gap between Scotland and the rest of UK, both cartoons also depict Tony Blair, indicating his role in the potential separation. These images are quite powerful in the sense of showing the potential outcome. Note that both cartoons are from right of centre British newspapers. Scottish newspapers are not resorting to such 'visual scaremongering'. Or as a popular Scottish tabloid, *Daily Record* wrote:

> it is evil to accuse all those who are going to vote "YES" of trying to Tear Britain Apart. There is no sinister plot to put steel shutters across the A74 at Gretna Green and to warn the English not to cross their Metal Bridge! (DREC080279)

9.2. Concluding remarks

Looking at the cartoons has proved quite illuminating. The wide range of icons used in the cartoons, the hidden – and often politically incorrect – messages, personifications and topics used in cartoons all provide an interesting focus for analysis. Looking at these aspects across time and across newspapers (English/Scottish, broadsheet/popular, etc.) gives the researcher an insight into popular culture and distils the various identity presentations of the time. The chapter has shown that cartoons are a valid and worthy data on their own right. As almost all cartoons in my data corpus reflect the main feature article on a given newspaper, then, following Brinkman (1968), it is highly likely that they are capable of influencing readers. Cartoons are definitely an interesting and useful area for the study of discursive analysis of *visual* national identity construction.

10. Conclusion

This thesis has analysed the discursive construction of national identities in the media, focusing on the dialectic between the national Self and Other. I chose Scotland as my case study. More specifically, I looked at two key discourse moments in the last century – the devolution referenda of 1979 and 1997. Campaigns for constitutional change at the last quarter of the twentieth century forced Scots to engage in serious national navel-gazing. 'Who are we?' 'Where do we come from?' 'Where are we going to?' 'Why do we need devolution?' – all those questions were asked, and tentatively answered, in the various campaigns surrounding devolution in Scotland. Reicher & Hopkins argue that 'such a context of division is bound to lead to a focus on difference and hence a need to identify exactly what it is that renders any one nation different from others' (2001:viii). Those key discourse moments were therefore ideal for gaining an insight into how Scottishness is constructed discursively in a Self/Other dialectic.

There are a number of underlying assumptions and three main strands of analysis to the thesis. *Firstly*, national identity is understood from a social constructionist perspective. That is to say, that although I believe that nations need 'navels' – Ernest Gellner (1996) himself has strongly made the case that they do not – I admit that these can be imagined, invented and forged. *Secondly*, the identity construction is always conducted in Self/Other dialectic. In order to know who one is, one needs to know who one is not, and who the Other is. Although nationalism studies are full of literature focusing on the threat of the Other, I argue that the Other need not be only negative, but can also be positive. *Thirdly*, the media are one important arena where such identity construction and maintenance takes place, and therefore provide a useful focus of analysis. The media, of course, are not the only possible field of analysis – large-scale surveys, in-depth interviews, analyses of literature, school curricula, and political speeches and leaflets etc. can all provide an insight into how national identities are constructed. But in today's media-saturated society, the media do matter. *Fourthly*, following the recent trend of 'getting microscopic', I decided against large-scale quantitative content analysis. As I am more interested in the way identities are constructed discursively, the analysis is mostly qualitative. The theoretical chapters on identity and the media, and more practical chapters on the data corpus and

methodology prepare the way for the analysis of the media discourse in Scotland in Chapters 7-9.

The three main strands of analysis in these three chapters focused on the Self/Other dialectic, national deixes and visual constructions of Scottishness in two main Scottish national broadsheets. In many ways, Scottish media provide a textbook case study, as all the typical rhetorical strategies relevant to the discursive construction of national identities, are used while discursively constructing Scottishness and otherness. The differentiation, construction and transformation strategies, and attributional bias are all common, and I look at them in more detail in my thesis.

Firstly, the Self/Other dialectic is common in the Scottish media, as Chapter 2 suggests. The most prominent negative Other is Westminster, being metonymically used to represent the United Kingdom and its unsatisfactory system of government. Conservative politicians, whether in Scotland or elsewhere in the UK, are also represented by the media as alien to Scotland. England, the stereotypical 'arch-enemy' of Scotland, features in the media, although not always in an explicitly negative light. However, when England is praised, it is in relation to Scotland and, in accordance with attributional bias, the positivity of the English Other is usually situational and not dispositional. While the English and England are a prominent Other in the Scottish media, they remain an outsider. The English in Scotland, who form the largest foreign-born community north of the Border, are mentioned in only two leader articles in the whole data corpus.

Wales and Northern Ireland, the other two devolved parts of the United Kingdom, are discussed much less in the media. Indeed, I introduce a notion of the Welsh non-Other in Chapter 7. As both Wales and Scotland held their devolution referenda in 1979 and 1997, I expected much more comparisons between two nations. But my data do not support this expectation. When Wales is mentioned, it is usually in order to show Scotland in a considerably better light than Wales. Instead of healthy sibling rivalry, there is criticism and downplaying of Wales, to the extent of doubting the existence of a Welsh nation. Effectively, these media take a *de facto* position that Northern Ireland is another country altogether, and that Wales can hardly be described as a nation. This implies that the only constituent nations of the United Kingdom are Scotland and

England. Consequently, Scottish newspapers paint an image of the United Kingdom as a bi- and not a multinational state.

Interestingly, there are many other non-Others in the Scottish media – or Others that are not there. According to nationalism literature, immigrants are usually considered a negative internal Other by many nations. But not in Scotland. Migrant communities are not *topoi* that are discussed in relation to devolution in Scotland. Whether that is a sign of the claimed civic nature of Scottish national self-description (and hence the ethnic background of potential Scottish citizen does not matter) or the small (and hence insignificant?) size of the migrant population in Scotland, is hard to tell. So while depicting the UK as a bi-national state, Scotland is described as very homogeneous and the multicultural dimension is missing. This is another form of construction strategy, building a homogenous and united nation.

There is another Other that is not there. Having read Greenfeld (1992) and Colley (1996), who both identify France as a key Other in the Britishing of Scotland - it was surprising that France and the French were a non-Other in the Scottish media, despite the Auld Alliance and Mary, Queen of Scots. Although I came across some extremely stereotypical descriptions of French politicians while compiling my data corpus, leader articles that discuss devolution do not make any references to France or the French.

Although the Other is usually depicted in the media in a negative light, this is not always the case. The othering can be much more subtle and often the Other is used as a 'neutral' foil to show Scotland in better light. I also discuss the role of positive Others in nation building and preserving in Chapter 2. My earlier research on Estonia (Petersoo 2000) shows that the role of positive Others is very important for the forging of national identity. In the Scottish media, Europe, especially Scandinavian countries, figure as positive reference points. The latter are small, successful and independent nation-states, and the media use them as an example of a possible future model for Scotland. And 'the modern world' discourse is very strong in the media. According to this normalising perspective, Scotland needs to re-enter the world of nation-states as an equal player. This is necessary in order for Scotland to regain its sapped self-confidence, self-respect, entrepreneurial spirit, dignity, sense of

responsibility, creativity, etc. – all essential for a strong and thriving nation. And, of course, attributional bias is evident here as well – in 'normal' circumstances, Scotland would have all these praiseworthy traits, and the current lack of these is situational, not dispositional.

Secondly, deictic language in the media is very complex. Looking at the use of deixes in the media is revealing, and Billig's concept of banal nationalism proved very useful. I analyse the use of some of the smallest words in nationalism vocabulary – the personal pronoun 'we'/'us'/'our', as well as other national deixes – 'nation', 'country', 'people' and 'history'. Billig suggests that the national deixes in the media is rather uncontroversial and always designates the nation. He shows in *Banal Nationalism* how newspaper headlines and articles use deictic notions 'we', 'nation' etc. to refer regularly to Britain. And Brookes insists that even when the media do not make explicit references to the nation, they are to be understood in national contexts. But what does that mean in the Scottish media environment? Where is the 'nation' in Scotland? Where is the deictic centre of the Scottish national media? The situation is much more complicated in Scotland and this is reflected in deictic wandering. Even within the same leader article – and indeed, within a single paragraph – the deixis can refer to the newspaper, or Scotland, or Britain, or the abstract notion of 'the people of the world'. It is in this sense that the deixis 'wanders'. Of course, as it is possible for people to identify themselves both as Scots and as Britons, then it is not surprising that these are occasionally used interchangeably in the media, either explicitly or implicitly. Nevertheless, it is interesting to see how Scottish and British references are used within the same leader article. Although one could expect there to be more clarity in the use of deictic notions in the Scottish media (after all, it is often claimed that the Scots can easily distinguish between what is Scottish and what is British, as opposed to their allegedly terminally confused neighbours south of the Border), this is not always the case. Still, the vast majority of leader articles use both the personal deixis 'we' and other deictic notions to refer to Scotland. Although the occasional (yet common) wandering of deictic notions is perhaps unsurprising in this context of Scottish nation in British nation/state, it certainly undermines Billig's discussions of the British national media and the simple recognition of deictic media language. The newspaper reader in Scotland has to put a lot of (un- and subconscious) work into interpreting the various deixes that they are confronted with when they conduct their

daily newspaper reading ritual and (un- and subconsciously) recognise their national selves. Hence identifying with their respective imagined national communities is not as uncomplicated as Billig suggests. One should talk about the flexibility of meaning rather than taken-for-grantedness of deictic notions.

And *last*, but not least, the thesis examines political cartoons. Although this proved to be one of the more entertaining parts of the analysis and writing of the thesis, it was probably the most difficult one. As visual sociology is a comparatively new area of research, there are no clear guidelines how 'to do' visual sociology, no previous studies to learn from. Therefore, I had to start from scratch and the conducted research is only a preliminary attempt to understand the data. However, some tentative suggestions can be made. First of all, the cartoons are there to illustrate the main commentary and/or leader article. As the old proverb says, a picture is worth a thousand words and should make a greater and more lasting impression on the reader. What is derived from a cartoon many depend on the interpretation that the reader brings to it. What is not in dispute is that cartoons do help readers to remember the topic of the (leader) article better and are therefore worth paying attention to. Secondly, cartoons are rich in (Scottish) iconography and looking at them across time can inform us about popular culture and iconic figures, nicely distilling various identity presentations of the time. And thirdly, cartoons are full of hidden messages that would be unacceptable if spelled out in words in the era of political correctness. Consequently, cartoons are an interesting area for the study of discursive analysis of national identity construction visually.

There are several avenues for future research that came out of the thesis. Evidently, a comparative study of Scottish and British media would be interesting. While it is claimed that British media are national media, the constitutional change that has taken place contests this very nationness. Scottish media are the national media for the Scots, and this fits somewhat uneasily with the British national newspaper scheme. As political developments have rendered the category 'British national media' problematic both theoretically and analytically (MacInnes *et al.* 2005), one needs to reassess the research done so far on the topic. This, again, opens up possibilities for useful comparative research on Scottish national and British national media – or Welsh, English and Northern Irish media. Comparative analysis of various media

would also allow one to research the Self/Other dialectic in more detail. Social identity theories emphasise the importance of being recognised by the Other. Billig suggests that sometimes the national 'we' will be – and needs to be - 'reassured to have confirmed "ourselves" as the Other of "our" Other' (1995:12). My research confirms that England is a strong Other for Scotland and hence important for the discursive construction of Scottishness. If one would analyse the discursive construction of Englishness in the newspapers south of the Border, would Scotland recognise itself as the Other in the eyes of its own Other, i.e. England? Is the relationship between the Self and Other the same in both directions? The analysis of such an issue would considerably further our understanding of the processes involved in national identity formation and maintenance. I have tried to show the usefulness of my positive/negative and internal/external typology of the Others for national identity construction, as outlined in Chapter 2 and discussed further in Chapter 7. In case of Scotland, however, I did not follow the internal/external dyad as meticulously as I did in case of Estonia. Nevertheless, the negative/positive dyad works well in case of Scotland, and hence shows a way for a more thorough future research on the role of positive Others in national identity formation and maintenance.

Another important issue for further research is the role of the media in general, and newspapers in particular, in national identity construction. The specific and particular nature of media language has possibly a very important role to play in identification processes and has thus far received only scant attention from scholars. What are the implications for debates about the moral nature of nationalism? Do the media have the ability to fuel/tame phenomena like xenophobia and discrimination? All these issues need to be researched further.

The thesis started out from two main directions – national identity studies and media studies. It examined the relationship between mass media and national identity, and the discursive construction of Self/Other dialectic in the media. National identity formation and maintenance is a very multi-faceted process. While I started out by looking at the Self/Other dialectic in the media, I became more detailed and 'microscopic' as my research progressed and was also looking at the deictic nature of the media language and various linguistic means of identity construction. Moreover, the discursive construction of national identity proved to be not only textual – that is

why the thesis also looked at visual identity constructions in the form of political cartoons.

I would like to believe that my thesis has made a certain contribution to various areas of sociology, such as media, national identity, Scotland, discourse, visual sociology, the use of deixis, and the concept of the Other. Much more needs to be done if we are to understand the complexities of 'othering' in Scotland and in the wider world. I am looking forward to exploring these during my post-doctoral fellowship.

11. Appendices

11.1. Leader article data corpus

Leader article headlines – 1979 devolution referendum (1 Feb – 31 Mar)

Date	Scotsman (27)	Herald (13)
Feb 1		
Feb 2		
Feb 3		
Feb 4		
Feb 5	Scotland's choice	
Feb 6		Very good afternoon
Feb 7	Agenda for the Assembly: Family law	
Feb 8	Agenda for the Assembly: Educational stimulus	
Feb 9	Agenda for the Assembly: The public purse	
Feb 10		
Feb 11		
Feb 12	Agenda for the Assembly: Renovating the law	The gap narrows
Feb 13	Agenda for the Assembly: Healthy discussion	An act of faith – for Scotland
Feb 14	Agenda for the Assembly: Questions about housing	
Feb 15	Agenda for the Assembly: Tourist policies	
Feb 16	Agenda for the Assembly: Prison affairs	
Feb 17	Referendum debate	Fair play ruling
Feb 18		
Feb 19		
Feb 20		Under examination
Feb 21	Not generous	
Feb 22	The case against No	
Feb 23	Why we must vote Yes	Out of bounds
Feb 24		
Feb 25		
Feb 26		What the papers say
Feb 27	Scotland's exports	
Feb 28		
Mar 1	**Moment of decision**	**Scotland must give a decisive answer today**
Mar 2		
Mar 3	Callaghan's duty	Does this have to be our last word?
Mar 4		
Mar 5	Vexed politicians	State of the union
Mar 6		
Mar 7		
Mar 8		
Mar 9	Tactical options	
Mar 10	Electoral ploys	Government off the hook
Mar 11		
Mar 12	- First steps - Divided and confused	
Mar 13		
Mar 14		
Mar 15		
Mar 16	Devolution puzzle	Playing for time
Mar 17		
Mar 18		
Mar 19		
Mar 20	Market for votes	
Mar 21		
Mar 22		
Mar 23	At bay	
Mar 24	Tory options	In the balance

Mar 25	
Mar 26	Here we go again
Mar 27	
Mar 28	
Mar 29	Rites of spring
Mar 30	
Mar 31	

Leader article headlines – 1997 devolution referendum (11 Aug-10 Oct)

Date	Scotsman (40)	Herald (30)
Aug 11	A home rule peace process	Why we need Tam
Aug 12	Speaking up to honest Tam	Plight of the innocents
Aug 13	Edinburgh's blueprint	
Aug 14		Dilemma over Dounreay
Aug 15		
Aug 16		Devolution omens
Aug 17	Voter apathy looms	
Aug 18	The wealth of the nation	
Aug 19	Dewar must stop the rot	Labour's damaging dither
Aug 20		The real decision we face
Aug 21	New faces for a new parliament	Beauty tackles the beast
Aug 22	A view from the Mound	Scottish tax-varying powers
Aug 23		
Aug 24	Labour leaves two hostages to fortune	
Aug 25	New role of Scottish Secretary	The theory of devolution
Aug 26	Time to raise the home rule game	
Aug 27	Refighting a losing battle	Blair must offer leadership
Aug 28		Campaign stutters on
Aug 29	Industry must find a voice	Racism in Scotland: Attacks on English a disgrace
Aug 30	Museums and the national interest	
Aug 31	Raise the tone of devolution debate	
Sep 1		
Sep 2		A harmful hiatus
Sep 3	Decency and devolution	Life must go on: Why we will foster devolution debate
Sep 4		Emotions of a nation: Perverse alchemists at work
Sep 5	Shadow boxing for Scottish business	- Well-served by the system - The Tory dilemma: Time to grasp the Home Rule thistle
Sep 6	A monarch and her country	
Sep 7	A glittering prize for Scotland	
Sep 8	Raise the voice of a nation	Challenge of change: An end to the democratic deficit
Sep 9	A helping hand for home rule	Challenge facing Blair: Momentum of change must be maintained
Sep 10	No hopers mar 'No' campaign	
Sep 11	**The rebirth of a nation**	**A worthy and lively debate: All worries of apathy have been dispelled**
Sep 12	A triumph of the settled will	
Sep 13	The first day of a new life	Now let's celebrate: We wish you a happy new era
Sep 14	Considered view of Scotland the sober	
Sep 15	The opposition Scotland needs	Responsibility for Dounreay: Scottish Office must act decisively
Sep 16	A leader rushing to judgement	The Welsh split
Sep 17		Lessons for the leader: Hague should be given time to settle
Sep 18	Time for public to have a say	
Sep 19		
Sep 20	Now the west Wales question	After the Welsh wobbles: A referendum is not always the way forward
Sep 21		
Sep 22		
Sep 23	Pondering the parliament	Parliament's location: Leith out in front despite problems
Sep 24	Honest choices and the SNP	
Sep 25	Mandelson's gift to separatism	McTammany Hall: The accused must have their say

Sep 26	Defending the indefensible	Scottish Tory realism: Home Rule best chance to revive fortunes
Sep 27	Agreeing not to differ (much)	
Sep 28		
Sep 29		
Sep 30	Dewar on wrong course to port	Bursting Blair's bubble: The real challenges and critics lie in wait
Sep 31		
Oct 1	Sermons and sound-bites	
Oct 2		
Oct 3		
Oct 4		
Oct 5	Pride of place for a Scottish parliament	
Oct 6	Is Scotland in Europe or not?	
Oct 7		
Oct 8		
Oct 9	The silence of the shamed	The wrong decision
Oct 10		

Notes

- Sundays are highlighted in grey to facilitate better reading of the table.
- Devolution dates are highlighted in bold.

11.2. Political cartoons data corpus

Cartoons in the 1979 and 1997 data corpus:

Cartoon ID	Paper ID	Cartoonist	Source
1	SCOT030279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
2	SCOT060279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
3	SCOT130279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
4	SCOT160279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
5	SCOT170279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
6	SCOT190279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
7	SUN190279	Stanley Franklin	31690
8	SCOT200279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
9	HERA200279	Turnbull	Scanned
10	MAIL210279	Mac (Stan McMurtry)	31695
11	HERA220279	Turnbull	Scanned
12	SCOT240279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
13	HERA240279	Turnbull	Scanned
14	TELS250279	John Jensen	JJ0539
15	SUN270279	Stanley Franklin	31716
16	TELE270279	Nicholas Garland	NG1871
17	SCOT270279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
18	SCOT270279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
19	HERA270279	Turnbull	Scanned
20	EVES270279	Jak (Raymond Jackson)	31717
21	HERA280279	Turnbull	Scanned
22	SCOT280279	Bob Dewar	Scanned
23	DEXP280279	Michael Cummings	31718
24	SCOT010379	Bob Dewar	Scanned
25	HERA010379	Turnbull	Scanned
26	DEXP010379	Carl Giles	32750
27	SUN010379	Stanley Franklin	32749
28	MAIL010379	Jon (John Philpin Jones)	32751
29	MAIL020379	Mac (Stan McMurtry)	MA0079
30	HERA030379	Turnbull	Scanned
31	DEXP030379	Jak (Raymond Jackson)	32755
32	SUN050379	Stanley Franklin	32758
33	TELE090379	Nicholas Garland	NG1874
34	HERA010379	Turnbull	Scanned
35	TELE160379	Nicholas Garland	NG1877
36	TELE220379	Nicholas Garland	32814
37	HERA230379	Turnbull	Scanned
38	TELE250379	John Jensen	JJ0542
39	TELE270379	Nicholas Garland	NG1878
40	SCOT150897	High	Scanned
41	HERA160897	Bill McArthur	PC2639
42	SCOT190897	High	Scanned
43	HERA190897	Bill McArthur	PC2558
44	GUAR210897	Felix Bennett	PC2437
45	HERA210897	Bill McArthur	PC2562
46	SCOT210897	High	Scanned
47	INDE210897	Dave Brown	PC2436
49	SCOT280897	High	Scanned
50	GUAR290897	Steve Fricker	PC2451
51	HERA290897	Bill McArthur	PC2804
52	SCOT030997	High	Scanned
53	HERA040997	Bill McArthur	PC2800
54	GUAR040997	Steve Bell	PC2476

55	HERA080997	Bill McArthur	PC2796
56	HERA080997	Bill McArthur	PC2797
57	TIME080997	Peter Brookes	PC2480
58	GUAR090997	Steve Bell	PC2489
59	SCOT090997	High	Scanned
60	HERA090997	Bill McArthur	PC2785
61	INDE090997	Peter Schrank	PC2484
62	HERA100997	Bill McArthur	PC2793
63	HERA100997	Bill McArthur	PC2649
64	SCOT100997	High	Scanned
65	HERA100997	Bill McArthur	PC2648
66	TELE100997	Nicholas Garland	PC2513
67	TIME110997	Peter Brookes	PC2486
68	HERA110997	Bill McArthur	PC2794
69	SCOT110997	High	Scanned
70	EXPR110997	Bernard Cookson	PC2498
71	GUAR110997	Steve Bell	PC2496
72	INDE110997	Peter Schrank	PC2497
73	HERA120997	Bill McArthur	PC2792
74	HERA130997	Bill McArthur	PC2791
75	TIME130997	Peter Brookes	PC2502
76	TELE130997	Nicholas Garland	PC2511
77	SCOT130997	High	Scanned
78	SOS140997	Steve Cam..	Scanned
79	INDS140997	Peter Schrank	PC2503
80	TELS140997	Trog (Wally Fawkes)	PC2572
81	OBSE140997	Chris Riddell	PC2504
82	GUAR150997	Martin Rowson	PC2507
83	INDE180997	Priestly	PC2525
84	SCOT190997	Bill	Scanned
85	OBSE210997	Chris Riddell	PC2530
86	HERA..0997	Bill McArthur	PC2647
87	HERA..0997	Bill McArthur	PC2644
Total: 86			

Other cartoons used in the thesis:

Cartoon ID	Paper ID	Cartoonist	Source
88	TELE..0894	Nicholas Garland	NG5563
98	TIME010397	Michael Cummings	PC0978
115	TIME230797	Peter Brookes	PC2278
117	TELE250797	Nicholas Garland	PC2302
118	INDE250797	Dave Brown	PC2303
123	EXPS270797	Martyn Turner	PC2352
134	MIRR10056	Stanley Franklin	13398
145	SUN271175	Stanley Franklin	28773
177	SPECTATOR	Nicholas Garland	NG4696
192	TELS151198	Trog (Wally Fawkes)	PC4954
228	GUAR200302	Steve Bell	Scanned
234	DMAIL010704	Mac	Scanned

Notes:

- The number in the first column indicates the cartoon ID in my cartoon database.
- The last column shows the ID of the cartoon in the CartoonHub database at http://library.kent.ac.uk/cartoons. 'Scanned' indicates that the cartoon was scanned into my database either from a microfilm printout or directly from the newspaper.

11.3. Interview data corpus

Interviewee number	Newspaper title	Position	Date	Place	IW
1	Independent	Columnist	2002	London	PP
2	Scotsman	Columnist	2001	London	MR
3	Scottish Daily Mail	Scottish political reporter	2002	Edinburgh	MR
4	Scottish News of the World	Editor	2004	Glasgow	PP
5	Scottish Daily Mail	Staff reporter	2002	Glasgow	MR
6	Scottish Daily Express	Staff reporter	2003	Glasgow	MR
7	Observer	Columnist	2002	London	MR
8	Observer	Scotland correspondent	2002	Edinburgh	MR PP
9	Freelance	Columnist	2002	Glasgow	PP
10	Guardian	Foreign Affairs Editor	2002	London	PP
11	Times	Scottish editor	2003	London	JM
12	Scotland on Sunday	Assistant editor	2002	Edinburgh	MR
13	Scottish Daily Mail	Sports reporter	2002	Glasgow,	MR
14	Daily Telegraph	Political correspondent	2002	Edinburgh	PP
15	Observer	Former editor	2002	London	PP
16	Western Mail		2003	London	JM
17	Daily Telegraph	Political correspondent	2002	London	PP
18	Record	Features Editor	2003	Glasgow	MR
Total: 18					

Notes:

- Interviewers: John MacInnes (JM), Pille Petersoo (PP), Michael Rosie (MR)
- All interviews have been transcribed verbatim.

11.4. Chronology of history

Year	Month	Event
843		Scots and Picts unified in the Kingdom of Alba
1034		Britons and Angles politically incorporated into Kingdom of Alba
1286-1371		Wars of Independence between Scotland and England
1314		Battle of Bannockburn, led by Robert the Bruce
1320		Declaration of Arbroath
1400-1600		The approximate period of the custom bonding
1560		'First' Reformation
1567		'Second' Reformation
1581		The *Negative Confession* (religious bond of James VI's household)
1587		James VI becomes King
1591-1662		Periodic witch-hunting panics
1603		England and Scotland share the monarch, i.e. the Union of Crowns
1609		The Band and Statute of Incolmkill (Iona)
1625		Charles I becomes King
1638		National Covenant
1643		Solemn League and Covenant
1649		Charles I beheaded
1650-1660		Cromwellian Interregnum
1666		Covenanting Uprising ('Pentland Rising')
1679		Covenanting Uprising ('Bothwell Bridge')
1689		First Claim of Right
1698		Scottish colony established at Darien (Panama), only to fail
1707	May 1	The Acts of Union between the parliaments of England and Scotland Scotland's last parliament adjourned/dissolved
1712		Patronage Act
1715		Jacobite uprising
1719		Jacobite uprising
1733		First church secession establishes the Associate Presbytery
1742		Centenary of the Solemn League and Covenant observed by Associate Presbytery
1745		Jacobite uprising
1746		Defeat of Jacobites at battle of Culloden
1761		Second church secession established the Relief Church
1790-1830		Main period of Highland Clearances
1792		Friends of the People Society established (Radical organisation)
1793		United Scotsmen established (Radical organisation)
1801		Ireland added to the British state
1820		The 'Radical War'
1832		First Reform Act
1842		Second Claim of Right
1843		Kirk splits in the 'Great Disruption'
1868		Second Reform Act
1880-1914		Approximate period of the 'Kailyard' literature
1882		Highland Land League formed
1884		Third Reform Act
1885		Secretary for Scotland established
1885		Crofter's Party established
1886		Scottish Home Rule Association established Crofter's Holding Act
1886		The Scottish Office established giving 'a territorial, political and administrative dimension' to 'the national institutional matrix' (Schlesinger 1998:61)
1888		Scottish Labour Party established
1893		Independent Labour Party established
1906		Labour Party in Scotland established
1912		Conservative Party merges with break-away pro-union Liberals

1918		Scottish Home Rule Association re-established
1919		Peak of Red Clydeside labour unrest
1920		Communist Party of Great Britain established
		Scots National League established
1923		John MacLean campaigns as a Scottish Worker's Republican candidate
1924		Labour home rule bill put before parliament
1927		Labour home rule bill put before parliament
1928		National Party of Scotland established
1932		Scottish Self-Government Party established
1934		Scottish National Party founded out of earlier national parties
1935		Communist Party adopts popular front, rapprochement with home rule movement
1942		Beveridge Report signals growth of Britain welfare state
		Split in SNP over party versus movement strategies
1945		Robert MacIntyre wins Motherwell by-election for SNP
1947		Scottish National Assembly formed by John MacCormick
1949		National Covenant Created
1949-1966		New Towns established
1951		The Stone of Destiny briefly brought to Scotland from Westminster Abbey
1962		The Commonwealth Immigration Act
1967		Winnie Ewing wins Hamilton by-election for SNP
1971		The Immigration Act
1972		Assembly in Northern Ireland abolished
1973		Scottish Local Government reorganisation; COSLA established
	October	Report of Royal Commission on the Constitution
1974	February	General Election. Labour Government elected (H. Wilson, PM). W. Ross becomes Secretary of State for Scotland. SNP sends 11 MPs to Westminster.
	June	Privy Council Paper "Devolution within the United Kingdom: some alternatives for discussion"
	September	Government White Paper "Democracy and Devolution: proposals for Scotland and Wales" (Cmnd 5732)
	October	General Election. Labour Government returned (H. Wilson, PM). W. Ross continues as Secretary of State for Scotland
1975	November	Government White Paper "Our Changing Democracy" (Cmnd 6348)
	December	Scottish Labour Party (SLP) formed
1976	January	SLP launched
	April	H. Wilson resigns and J. Callaghan appointed PM. B. Millan, Secretary of State for Scotland; M. Foot, Lord President
	May	Keep Britain United (KBU) launched
	August	Government White Paper "Devolution to Scotland and Wales: supplementary statement" (Cmnd 6585)
	September	Scotland is British (SIB) formed
	November 23	SIB launched
	November 29	Scotland and Wales Bill published
	Nov/Dec	Union Flag group formed
	December 8	Shadow Cabinet decision to oppose Second Reading of Scotland and Wales Bill. Resignation of shadow Secretary of State for Scotland A. Buchanan-Smith and shadow Scottish Office spokesman Malcolm Rifkind. T. Taylor appointed shadow Secretary of State for Scotland
	December 16	Government announces intention of holding referenda in Scotland and Wales before implementation of the Bill
1977	February	Guillotine (timetable) motion defeated. Scotland and Wales Bill dropped.
	March 21	Alliance for a Scottish Assembly formed
	March 24	Government reaches agreement with Liberal Party (Lib.-Lab. Pact)
	April	J. Smith takes over responsibility for devolution
	July	Government announces intention of introducing separate Bills for Scotland and Wales
	November 4	Scotland Bill published
	November 27	Labour Party (Scottish Executive) decides to go it alone in campaigning for a

		Yes vote in the Referendum
1978		*Scottish Government Yearbook* established
	January 25	Cunningham amendment (40 per cent rule) passed
	January 26	Yes for Scotland (YFS) launched
	March	Labour Party (Scottish Council) Conference endorses Scottish Executive line on Referendum campaigning
	July 31	Scotland Bill receives Royal Assent as The Scotland Act 1978
	November 1	Date of Referendum announced
	November 11	J. Smith appointed Minister of Trade
	November 13	Labour Party Scottish Secretary rules out cross-party cooperation in Yes campaign
	November 14	First leaflet published by Labour Vote No (LVN)
	November 26	Liberal Leader warns against proliferation of Yes groups
	November 27	Alliance for an Assembly (AFA) launched LVN launched
	November 30	Scotland Says No (SSN) launched Labour Movement Yes (LMY) campaign plans announced
	December 20	Referendum Order (No. 1912) published
1979		'79 Group formed (within SNP)
	February 12	LMY campaign launched by Prime Minister Callaghan
	March 1	Referendum Day
	March 2	Results announced. 63.8% turnout, 51.6% for parliament (but only 32.9% of the total electorate).
	March 28	Government defeated on No Confidence motion in House of Commons
	May	General Election. Conservative Government elected (Ms M. Thatcher, PM). G. Younger, Secretary of State for Scotland
	June 20	Repeal of The Scotland Act 1978 Campaign for a Scottish Assembly (later Parliament) established First version of Siol Nan Gaidheal formed
1981		The Nationality Act
1983		General Election
1983-1991		Duration of magazine *Radical Scotland*
1985		Greater London Council abolished
1987		General election
1988		Third Claim of Right Scottish Labour Action formed (within Labour) Second version of Siol Nan Gaidheal formed
1989	March	First meeting of the Scottish Constitutional Convention 'Poll Tax' introduced in Scotland *A Claim of Right for Scotland*
1991		Democratic Left formed out of Communist Party
1992	April 9	General Election. Tories returned in only 11 of the 72 Scottish seats. Tommy Sheridan gets 20% of vote running for Westminster while serving sentence for non-payment of Poll Tax. Common cause established in run-up to general election Democracy for Scotland formed in wake of general election ('The Vigil') Scotland United formed in wake of general election
	December 12	Democracy Declaration presented at the Scotland Demands Democracy Rally, on the occasion of the European Summit
1993		Scottish Watch and Settler Watch begin appearing in the news Coalition for Scottish Democracy formed
	November 27	Rally to Recall Scotland's Parliament out of Adjournement Campaign for a Scottish Parliament conducts mini-referendum in Falkirk *Scottish Affairs* replaces the *Scottish Government Yearbook*
1994		Labour Party Scotland changes name to Scottish Labour Party Consultative Conference on the establishment of a Scottish Senate (later the Scottish Civic Forum) Death of John Smith, Labour Party leader
1995-1996		Scottish Local Government reorganisation

1995		*Scotland's Parliament, Scotland's Right* published by Scottish Constitutional Convention
1996		Tory government returns Stone of Destiny to Edinburgh
1997	May	General Election. Tories failed to return a single Scottish MP to Westminster. Labour landslide victory. Scotland FORward formed
	July	The Government published its devolution *White Paper, Scotland's Parliament*
	September 11	Devolution Referendum in Scotland. 60.4% turnout, 74.3% for Parliament, 63.5% for tax-varying powers.
	December	Scotland Bill put before Westminster Parliament
1999	May 6	First Elections to the Scottish Parliament
	July 1	D-Day: Official opening of the Parliament
2003	May 2	Second Elections to the Scottish Parliament
2004	Summer	MSPs start moving into the new Holyrood Parliament Building

Notes:

- The sources vary, but I found Bochel *et al.* 1981:xiii-xiv; Schlesinger 1998; and Hearn 2000 especially useful.

11.5. Newspaper circulation in Scotland and the United Kingdom

Newspaper	1979		1997		July 2004	
	UK	SCOT	UK	SCOT	UK	SCOT
Daily Record		700,000			465,885	437,269
The Sun	3,446,000		4,080,000		3,161,477	340,909
Daily Mail	1,726,000		1,788,000		2,285,106	125,933
Daily Star	-		738,000		778,740	89,189
Daily Express	2,822,000		1,279,000		879,812	81,598
The Herald		115,000			76,548	76,130
The Scotsman		90,000			65,055	63,346
Daily Mirror	3,968,000		2,518,000		1,661,290	58,758
The Times	319,000		647,000		609,621	27,234
Daily Telegraph	1,331,000		1,060,000		856,938	23,517
The Guardian	319,000		400,000		324,405	14,382
The Independent	-		294,000		226,054	12,439
Financial Times	181,000		294,000		127,614	6,348

Notes:

- The table only covers daily newspapers
- The titles are sorted according to their current sales figures in Scotland.
- Data for 2003 is from the website of the Audit Bureau of Circulations (www.abc.org.uk)
- Data for 1979 not available. The numbers are for 1975 as reported in Tunstall (1996:41,47,54)
- Data for 1997 not available. The numbers are for 1995 as reported in Tunstall (1996:41,47,54)
- Data for Scottish newspapers for 1979 is from Brown (1979)
- The Audit Bureau of Circulation categorises 'national titles' as following:
    - Popular papers: Daily Mirror, Daily Record, Daily Star, The Sun
    - Mid-market papers: Daily Express, The Daily Mail
    - Quality papers: Financial Times, The Daily Telegraph, The Guardian, The Herald, The Independent, The Scotsman, The Times

References

Althaus, S. L., *et al.* (2001). "Using Substitutes for Full-Text News Stories in Content Analysis: Which Text Is Best?" *American Journal of Political Science* 45(3):707-723.

Ammons, D. N., *et al.* (1988). "Unapproved Imagemakers: Political Cartoonists' Topic Selection, Objectives and Perceived Restrictions'." *Newspaper Research Journal* 9(3):79-90.

Anderson, B. (1991). *Imagined Communities: Reflections on the Origins and Spread of Nationalism.* London: Verso.

Anderson, B. (1993). "Nationalism, Identity, and the World-in-Motion: On the Logics of Seriality." *West European Politics* 16(2):117-133.

Armstrong, J. A. (2004). "Definitons, periodization, and prospects for the *longue duree*." *Nations and Nationalism* 10(1/2):9-18.

Banks, M. (1995). "Visual research methods." *Social Research Update* (11).

Banks, M. (2001). *Visual Methods in Social Research.* London: Sage.

Barker, M. (2003). "Assessing the `Quality' in Qualitative Research: The Case of Text-Audience Relations." *European Journal of Communication* 18(3):315-335.

Baudrillard, J. (1998). *The Consumer Society: Myths & Structures.* London, Sage Publications.

Bell, A. (1991). *The Language of News Media.* Oxford: Blackwell.

Bell, P. (2001) "Content Analysis of Visual Images". T. Van Leeuwen and C. Jewitt (ed.) *Handbook of Visual Analysis.* London: Sage Publications.

Berelson, B. (1952). *Content analysis of communication research.* Glencoe, Ill.: Free Press.

Berg, B. L. (1995). *Qualitative Research Methods for Social Sciences.* London: Allyn and Bacon.

Beuick, M. D. (1925). "The Social Tendency in Newspaper Editorials. I. The Decline of the Political Editorial." *Social Forces* 4(1):156-162.

Bhabha, H. K. (1990). "DissemiNation: time, narrative, and the margins of the modern nation". H. K. Bhabha (ed.) *Nation and Narration.* London: Routledge.

Bicket, D. (2001). *Media constructions of Scottish national identity through the prism of the new Scottish parliament.* PhD thesis, University of Washington.

Billig, M. (1995). *Banal Nationalism.* London: Sage.

Bochel, J., *et al.*, Eds. (1981). *The Referendum Experience: Scotland 1979.* Aberdeen: Aberdeen University Press.

Bond, R.&M. J. Rosie (2002). "National Identities in Post-Devolution Scotland." *Scottish Affairs* (40):34-53.

Bourdieu, P. (1977). *Outline of a theory of practice.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Bourdieu, P. (1998). *On Television.* London: Polity Press.

Brinkman, D. (1968). "Do editorial cartoons and editorials change opinions?" *Journalism Quarterly* 45(3):724-726.

Brookes, R. (1999). "Newspapers and national identity: the BSE/CJD crisis and the British press." *Media, Culture & Society* 21(2):247-263.

Brown, A., *et al.* (1998). *Politics and Society in Scotland.* London: Macmillan.

Brown, M. (1979) "The Scottish Morning Press and the Devolution Referendum of 1979". H. M. Drucker and N. L. Drucker (eds.) *The Scottish Government Yearbook 1980.* Edinburgh: Paul Harris Publishing.

Carbó, T. (1997) "Who Are They? The Rhetoric of Institutional Policies Toward the Indigenous Populations of Postrevolutionary Mexico". S. H. Riggins (ed.) *The language and politics of exclusion: Others in discourse.* London: Sage.

Carl, L. M. (1968). "Editorial cartoons fail to reach many readers." *Journalism Quarterly* 45(3):533-535.

Castells, M. (1996). *The Rise of Network Society.* Oxford: Blackwell.

Cerulo, K. A. (1997). "Identity Construction: New Issues, New Directions." *Annual Review of Sociology* 23:385-409.

Chapman, M. (1978). *The Gaelic Vision of Scottish Culture.* London: Croom Helm.

Chilton, P. (1987). "Metaphor, euphemism, and the militarization of language." *Current Research on Peace and Violence* 10:7-19.

Chouliaraki, L.&N. Fairclough (1999). *Discourse in Late Modernity: Rethinking Critical Discourse Analysis.* Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.

Choy, P. P., *et al.* (1994). *Coming Man. 19th Century American Perceptions of the Chinese.* London: University of Washington Press.

Chung, P. (2000). "The Cultural Other and National Identity in the Taiwanese and South Korean Media." *Gazette* 62(2):99-115.
Coats, W. J.&S. W. Mulkey (1950). "A Study in Newspaper Sampling." *Public Opinion Quarterly* 14(3):533-546.
Cohen, A. P. (1996). "Personal nationalism: a Scottish view of some rites, rights, and wrongs." *American Ethnologist* 23(4):802-815.
Cohen, B. C. (1963). *The Press, the Public and Foreign Policy*. Princeton: NJ, Princeton University Press.
Cohen, R. (1994). *Frontiners of Identity. The British and the Others*. London: Longman.
Colley, L. (1996). *Britons: Forging the Nation 1707-1837*. London: Vintage.
Competition Commission (2003). *Gannett UK Limited and SMG plc: A report on the proposed transfers*.
Connell, L. (2003). "The Scottishness of the Scottish press: 1918-39." *Media, Culture & Society* 25(2):187-207.
Coupe, W. A. (1969). "Observations on a Theory of Political Caricature." *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 11(1):79-95.
Craib, I. (1998). *Experiencing Identity*. London: Sage.
Cuff, R. P. (1945). "The American Editorial Cartoon - A Critical Historical Sketch." *Journal of Educational Sociology* 19(2):87-96.
Curran, J.&J. Seaton (1997). *Power without responsibility: The press and broadcasting in Britain*. London: Routledge.
Dahlgren, P. (1992) "Introduction". P. Dahlgren and C. Sparks (eds.) *Journalism and Popular Culture*. London: Sage.
Day, A. (2000). "The Wizards of Oz: Aussie Cartoonists Do It Their Way." *The Harvard International Journal of Press/Politics*, 5(3):96-101.
de Cillia, R., *et al.* (1999). "The discursive construction of national identities." *Discourse & Society* 10(2):149-173.
Delanty, G. (1995). *Inventing Europe: Idea, Identity, Reality*. London: Macmillan.
Deutsch, K. W. (1966). *Nationalism and Social Communication: An Inquiry into the Foundations of Nationality. 2nd edition*. London: The M.I.T. Press.
Devine, T.&P. Logue, Eds. (2002). *Being Scottish: Personal Reflections of Scottish Identity Today*. Edinburgh: Polygon at Edinburgh.
Devine, T. M. (1999). *The Scottish Nation 1700-2000*. London: Penguin Books.
Dhoest, A. (2004). "Negotiating images of the nation: the production of Flemish TV drama, 1953-89." *Media, Culture & Society* 26(3):393-408.
Díez Medrano, J.&P. Gutierrez (2001). "Nested identities: national and European identity in Spain." *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 24(5):753-778.
Dines-Levy, G. (1990). *Towards a Sociology of Cartoons: A Framework for Sociological Investigation with Special Reference to Playboy Sex Cartoons*. PhD Thesis, Department of Sociology, University of Salford.
Dor, D. (2003). "On Newspaper Headlines as Relevance Optimizers." *Journal of Pragmatics* 35(5):695-721.
Duara, P. (1996) "Historicising National Identity, or Who Imagines What and When". G. Eley and R. G. Suny (eds.) *Becoming National: A reader*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
Dunkerley, D., *et al.* (2002). *Changing Europe - Identities, nations and citizens*. London: Routledge.
Edmunds, J.&B. S. Turner (2001). "The re-invention of a national identity? Women and 'cosmopolitan' Englishness." *Ethnicities* 1(1):83-108.
Edwards, J. L. (1997). *Political Cartoons in the 1988 Presidential Campaign: Image, Metaphor, and Narrative*. London: Garland Publishing.
Elliott, P. (1974) "Uses and Gratification Research: A Critique and Sociological Alternative". J. G. Blumler and E. Katz (ed.) *The Uses of Mass Communications: Current Perspectives on Gratifications Research*. Beverly Hills: Sage.
Emmison, M.&P. Smith (2000). *Researching the Visual: Images, Objects, Contexts and Interactions in Social and Cultural Inquiry*. London: Sage Publications.
Eriksen, T. H. (1992). *Us and Them in Modern Societies: Ethnicity and Nationalism in Mauritius, Trinidad and Beyond*, Scandinavian University Press.
Eriksen, T. H. (2004). "Place, kinship and the case for non-ethnic nations." *Nations and Nationalism* 10(1/2):49-62.
Esser, F. (1999). "'Tabloidization' of News: A Comparative Analysis of Anglo-American and German Press Journalism." *European Journal of Communication* 14(3):291-324.

Estonian Institute (1997). *Estonian Cultural History: A short overview.*
Evans, M. (1996) "Languages of racism within contemporary Europe". B. Jenkins and S. A. Sofos (eds.) *Nation and Identity in Contemporary Europe.* London: Routledge.
Fairclough, N. (1992). *Discourse and Social Change.* Cambridge: Polity.
Fairclough, N. (1995). *Media Discourse.* London: Edward Arnold.
Fairclough, N. (2000). *New Labour, New Language?* London: Routledge.
Fairclough, N.&R. Wodak (1997) "Critical Discourse Analysis". T. A. van Dijk (ed.) *Discourse as Social Interaction.* London: Sage.
Feldman, O. (2000) "Non-oratorical Discourse and Political Humor in Japan: Editorial Cartoons, Satire and Attitudes Towards Authority". C. l. De Landtsheer and O. Feldman (eds.) *Beyond Public Speech and Symbols: Explorations in the Rhetoric of Politicians and the Media.* London: Praeger.
Ferguson, D. (1946). *The Scottish Newspaper Press.* Edinburgh: Oliver & Boyd for the Saltire Society.
Fernandez, J. W. (1986). *Persuasions and Performances: The Play of Tropes in Culture.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.
Fishman, J. (1996) "Language and Nationalism". S. Woolf (ed.) *Nationalism in Europe, 1815 to the Present.* London: Routledge.
Fitzgerald, T. K. (1991). "Media, ethnicity and identity." *Media, Culture & Society* 13:193-214.
Flick, U. (1998). *An Introduction to Qualitative Research.* London: Sage.
Fowler, R. (1991). *Language in the News: Discourse and Ideology in the Press.* London: Routledge.
Fürsich, E. (2002). "How can global journalists represent the 'Other'? A critical assessment of cultural studies concept for media practice." *Journalism* 3(1):57-84.
Galasinska, A.&D. Galasinski (2003). "Discursive strategies for coping with sensitive topics of the Other." *Journal of Ethnic and Migration Studies* 29(5):849-863.
Gamson, W. A. (1989). "News as Framing: Comments on Graber." *American Behavioural Scientist* 33(2):157-161.
Gamson, W. A.&D. Stuart (1992). "Media Discourse as a Symbolic Contest: The Bomb in Political Cartoons." *Sociological Forum* 7(1):55-86.
Garrett, P.&A. Bell (1998) "Media and Discourse: A Critical Overview". A. Bell and P. Garrett (ed.) *Approaches to Media Discourse.* Oxford:Blackwell.
Garton Ash, T. (1997) "Catching the Wrong Bus?". P. Gowan and P. Anderson (ed.) *The Question of Europe.* London: Verso.
Gellner, E. (1983). *Nations and Nationalism.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.
Gellner, E. (1996). "Do nations have navels?" *Nations and Nationalism* 2(3).
Gibbs, G. R. (2002). *Qualitative data analysis: explorations with NVivo.* Buckingham: Open University Press.
Göl, A. (2005). "Imagining the Turkish nation through 'othering' Armenians." *Nations and Nationalism* 11(1):121-139.
Greenfeld, L. (1992). *Nationalism. Five Roads to Modernity*, Harvard University Press.
Guibernau, M. (1996). *Nationalisms: The Nation-State and Nationalism in the Twentieth Century.* Cambridge: Polity Press.
Guibernau, M. (2004). "Anthony D. Smith on nations and national identity: a critical assessment." *Nations and Nationalism* 10(1/2):125-141.
Gunter, B. (2000). *Media Research Methods: Measuring Audiences, Reactions and Impact.* London: Sage Publications.
Habermas, J. (2001). *Avalikkuse struktuurimuutus: uurimused ühest kodanikuühiskonna kategooriast.* Tallinn: Varrak.
Hall, S. (1992) "The West and the Rest: Discourse and Power". S. Hall and B. Gieben (eds.) *Formations of Modernity.* Cambridge: Polity Press.
Hargreaves, A. G. (1996). "A deviant construction: the French media and the 'Banlieues'." *New Community* 22(4):607-618.
Harle, V. (1990) "European Roots of Dualism and its Alternatives in International Relations". V. Harle (ed.) *European Values in International Relations.* London: Pinter.
Harper, D. (1998) "On the Authority of the Image: Visual Methods at the Crossroads". N. K. Denzin and Y. S. Lincoln (ed.) *Collecting and Interpreting Qualitative Materials.* London: Sage.
Hassan, G.&C. Warhurst (2002) "Future Scotland: the making of the new social democracy". G. Hassan and C. Warhurst (ed.) *Tomorrow's Scotland.* London: Lawrence & Wishart.
Hazel, K.-J. (2001). "The Media and Nationalism in Québec: a complex relationship." *Journalism Studies* 2(1):93-107.

Hearn, J. (2000). *Claiming Scotland: National Identity and Liberal Culture*. Edinburgh: Polygon at Edinburgh.

Higgins, M. (2004). "Putting the nation in the news: the role of location formulation in a selection of Scottish newspapers." *Discourse & Society* 15(5):633-648.

Hijmans, E. (1996). "The logic of qualitative media content analysis: a typology." *Communications: The European Journal of Communication Research* 21(1):93-108.

Hjerm, M. (1998). "Reconstructing "Positive" Nationalism: Evidence from Norway and Sweden." *Sociological Research Online* 3(2).

Hobsbawm, E. (1992). *Nations and Nationalism Since 1780: Programme, Myth, Reality*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Holsti, O. (1969). *Content Analysis for the Social Sciences and Humanities*. Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley.

Holt, M.&P. Gubbins (2002) "Introduction". P. Gubbins and M. Holt (ed.) *Beyond Boundaries: Language and Identity in Contemporary Europe.* Clevedon: Multilingual Matters Ltd.

Huntington, S. (1993). "On clash of civilisations?" *Foreign Affairs* 72(3).

Hutchison, D., Ed. (1978a). *Headlines: The Media in Scotland*. Edinburgh: EUSPB.

Hvostov, A. (1998) "Tolerantse rahvuspoliitika võimalikkusest Eestis". *Sallivus. II Avatud Ühiskonna Foorum.* Tallinn: Avatud Eesti Fond.

Ichijo, A. (2002). *Nation and Europe in the British Public Discourse: The cases of Media and Political Elite Debates*. EURONAT project. Representations of Europe and the Nation in Current and Prospective Member-States: Media, Elites and Civil Society. Firenze, Robert Schuman Centre for Advanced Study, European University Institute.

Jansen, E. (1994). "Rahvuslusest ja rahvusriikide sünni eeldustest Baltimail." *Akadeemia* (November).

Jenkins, R. (1996). *Social Identity*. London: Routledge.

Jenkins, R. (2000a). "Categorisation: Identity, Social Process and Epistemology." *Current Sociology* 48(3):7-25.

Jucker, A. (1996). "News actor labelling in British newspapers." *Text* 16:373-390.

Kahn, R. A. (1950). *The Multinational Empire: Nationalism and National Reform in the Habsburg Monarchy, 1848-1918*. New York.

Kalb, M. (1997). "Editorial: The Clock is Ticking." *Intellectual Capital.Com* 2(1).

Kamusella, T. (1999). *The Deictic Aspect of the Ideology of Nationalism as a Factor Contributing to the Creation of the Other*. Paper presented at the Symposium: Creating the Other: The Causes and Dynamics of Nationalism, Ethnic Enmity, and Racism in Central and Eastern Europe. The Center for Austrian Studies, Hubert H. Humphrey Center, University of Minnesota, USA.

Keane, J. (1995) "Nations, Nationalism and European Citizen". S. Periwal (ed.) *Notions of Nationalism.* Budapest: Central European University Press.

Kionka, R.&R. Vetik (1996) "Estonia and the Estonians". G. Smith (ed.) *The Nationalities Question in the Post-Soviet States.* London: Longman.

Kirch, M.&A. Kirch (1995). "Ethnic relations: Estonians and non-Estonians." *Nationalities Papers* 23(1).

Klapper, J. (1960). *The Effects of Mass Communication*. New York: Free Press.

Krippendorff, K. (1980). *Content Analysis: An Introduction to its Methodology*. London: Sage Publications.

Kronrod, A.&O. Engel (2001). "Accessibility Theory and Referring Expressions in Newspaper Headlines." *Journal of Pragmatics* 33(5):683-699.

Lakoff, R. T. (1990). *Talking Power. The Politics of Language in Our Lives*. New York: Basic Books.

Lauk, E. (2002). *Role of the Press in Estonian Nation-Building in the 19th - 20th Centuries*. Paper presented at the Swedish-Estonian History Days/Den Svenska Historiedagarna, Tartu, Estonia, September 27-29.

Lauristin, M. (1997) "Contexts of Transition". M. Lauristin, P. Vihalemm, K. E. Rosengren and L. Weibull (ed.) *Return to the Western World: Cultural and Political Perspectives on the Estonian Post-Communist Transition.* Tartu: Tartu University Press.

Law, A. (2001). "Near and far: banal national identity and the press in Scotland." *Media, Culture & Society* 23(3):299-317.

Le, E. (2002). "Human rights discourse and international relations: *Le Monde*'s editorials on Russia." *Discourse & Society* 13(3):373-408.

Lieven, A. (1993). *The Baltic Revolution: Estonia, Latvia, Lithuania and the Path to Independence*. London: Yale University Press.

Low, D.&R. E. Williams (2000) "Political cartoon". *Encyclopaedia Americana.*

Luther, C. A. (2001). *Press Images, National Identity, and Foreign Policy: A Case Study of U.S.-Japan Relations from 1955-1995.* London: Routledge.
Macdonald, M. (1978) "The Press in Scotland". D. Hutchison (ed.) *Headlines: The Media in Scotland.* Edinburgh: EUSPB.
Macdonald, M. (2003). *Exploring Media Discourse*, Arnold.
MacInnes, J. (1992). "The Press in Scotland." *Scottish Affairs* (1):137-149.
MacInnes, J. (1994). "Rise and Be a Broadcaster Again?" *Scottish Affairs* (7):135-141.
MacInnes, J., *et al.* (2005). "Where is the British National Press." *Sociology* (forthcoming).
Maleševic', S. (2000). *Chetniks and Ustashas: Delegitimisation of an Ethnic Enemy in the Serbian and Croatian War – Time Cartoons.* Unpublished paper.
Matheson, D. (2000). "The birth of news discourse: changes in news language in British newspapers, 1880-1930." *Media, Culture & Society* 22(5):557-573.
Maurice, A. B.&F. T. Cooper (2000). *History of the 19th Century in Political Cartoons*, BoondocksNet Edition.
McCombs, M. E.&D. L. Shaw (1972). "The Agenda Setting Function of the Press." *Public Opinion Quarterly* 36(2):176-187.
McCrone, D. (1992). *Understanding Scotland: The Sociology of a Stateless Nation.* London: Routledge.
McCrone, D. (1998). *The Sociology of Nationalism: Tomorrow's anchestors.* Oxford: Blackwell.
McCrone, D. (2001a). *Understanding Scotland: the sociology of a nation.* London: Routledge.
McCrone, D. (2002). "Who do you say you are? Making sense of national identities in modern Britain." *Ethnicities* 2(3):301-320.
McCrone, D., *et al.* (1999). *Scotland – the Brand: The Making of Scottish Heritage.* Edinburgh: Polygon.
McCullagh, C. (2002). *Media Power: A Sociological Introduction.* Basingstoke: Palgrave.
McIntosh, I., *et al.* (2004). "'We Hate the English, Except for You, Cos You're Our Pal': Identification of the 'English' in Scotland." *Sociology* 38(1):43-59.
McLuhan, M. (1964). *Understanding Media: the extensions of man.* London: Routledge.
McNeil, R. (2003). *Hooray for Holyrood.* The Scotsman**:** S2, 27 March.
McQuail, D., *et al.* (1972) "The Television Audience: A Revised Perspective". D. McQuail (ed.) *Sociology of Mass Communications.* Harmondsworth: Penguin.
Mercer, K. (1990) "Welcome to the jungle: identity and diversity in post-modern politics". J. Rutherford (ed.) *Identity: Community, Culture and Difference.* London: Lawrence & Wishart.
Mettam, C. W.&S. W. Williams (1998). "Internal colonialism and cultural divisions of labour in the Soviet Republic of Estonia." *Nations and Nationalism* 4(3).
Morris, A. (2002). *The birth of a tenpenny thunderclap.* The Scotsman**:** http://heritage.scotsman.com/cfm/thescotsman.
Nairn, T. (1981). *The Break-Up of Britain. 2nd edition.* London: Verso.
Nairn, T. (1997). *Faces of Nationalism: Janus Revisited.* London: Verso.
Nairn, T. (2000). *After Britain: New Labour and the Return of Scotland.* London: Granta Books.
Nairn, T. (2002a). *Pariah: Misfortunes of the British Kingdom.* London: Verso.
Neumann, I. B. (1996). "Self and Other in International Relations." *European Journal of International Relations* 2(2).
Neumann, I. B.&J. M. Welsh (1991). "The Other in European Self-Definition: An Addendum to the Literature on International Society." *Review of International Studies* 17(4).
Newcomb, H. M. (1991) "On the Dialogic Aspects of Mass Communication". K. R. Avery and D. Eason (ed.) *Critical Perspectives on Media & Society.* New York: The Guildford Press.
Nir, R. (1993). "Discourse Analysis of News Headlines." *Hebrew Linguistics* (43):23-31.
Pardo, M. L. (2001). "Linguistic persuasion as an essential political factor in current democracies: critical analysis of the globalisation discourse in Argentina at the turn and at the end of the century." *Discourse & Society* 12(2):91-118.
Parekh, B. (1994). "Discourses on National Identity." *Political Studies* 42(3):492-504.
Parekh, B. (1995). "The concept of national identity." *New Community* 21(2):255-268.
Paterson, L. (1994). *The Autonomy of Modern Scotland.* Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.
Petersoo, P. (2000). "Nationalism and Dialectic with the Other: Positive and Negative Others in Estonia." *The Electronic Review of World Politics* 1(1).
Phillips, L. (1999). "Media discourse and the Danish monarchy: reconciling egalitarianism and royalism." *Media, Culture & Society* 21(2):221-245.
Piirimäe, H. (1997) "Historical Heritage: The Relations between Estonia and her Nordic Neighbors". M. Lauristin, P. Vihalemm, K. E. Rosengren and L. Weibull (eds.) *Return to the Western*

World: Cultural and Political Perspectives on the Estonian Post-Communist Transition. Tartu: Tartu University Press.

Potter, J.&M. Wetherell (1987). *Discourse and Social Psychology*. London: Sage.

Puette, W. (1992) "Cartoons: Drawn and Quartered". W. Puette (ed.) *Through Jaundiced Eyes: How the Media View Organized Labor.* Ithaca, NY: ILR Press.

Raun, T. U. (1997) "Estonia: independence redefined". I. Bremmer and R. Taras (eds.) *New States, New Politics: Building the Post-Soviet Nations.* Cambridge University Press.

Reicher, S.&N. Hopkins (2001). *Self and Nation: Categorisation, Contestation and Mobilisation.* London: Sage.

Ricento, T. (2003). "The discursive construction of Americanism." *Discourse & Society* 14(5):611-637.

Riggins, S. H. (1997) "The Rhetoric of Othering". S. H. Riggins (ed.) *The language and politics of exclusion: Others in discourse.* London: Sage.

Rose, G. (2001). *Visual Methodologies: An Introduction to the Interpretation of Visual Materials.* London: Sage.

Rosenfeld, S. S. (2000). "The Op-Ed Page: A Step to a Better Democracy." *The Harvard International Journal of Press/Politics,* 5(3):7-11.

Rosie, M. J., *et al.* (2004). "Nation speaking unto Nation? Newspapers and National Identity in the devolved UK." *Sociological Review* 52(4):437-458.

Ruutsoo, R. (1995a). "Introduction: Estonia on the Border of Two Civilisations." *Nationalities Papers* 23(1).

Ruutsoo, R. (1995b). "The Perception of Historical Identity and the Restoration of Estonian National Independence." *Nationalities Papers* 23(1).

Said, E. W. (1995). *Orientalism: Western Conceptions of the Orient. 2nd edition.* London: Penguin Books.

Sampson, E. E. (1993). *Celebrating the Other: a Dialogic Account of Human Nature.* London: Harvester Wheatsheaf.

Schlesinger, P. (1991a). *Media, State and Nation: Political Violence and Collective Identities.* London: Sage.

Schlesinger, P. (1998) "Scottish devolution and the media". J. Seaton (ed.) *Politics and the Media: Harlots and Prerogatives at the Turn of the Millennium.* Oxford: Blackwell.

Schlesinger, P. (2000) "The nation and communicative space". H. Tumber (ed.) *Media Power, Professionals and Policies.* London: Routledge.

Schlesinger, P., *et al.* (2001). *Open Scotland? Journalists, Spin Doctors and Lobbyists.* Edinburgh: Polygon at Edinburgh.

Schneider, J. (2001). "Talking German: Othering Strategies in Public and Everyday Discourses." *Gazette* 63(4):351-363.

Schneider, K. (2000) "The Emergence and Development of Headlines in British Newspapers". F. Ungerer (ed.) *English Media Texts - Past and Present: Language and textual structure.* Amsterdam: John Benjamins Publishing Company.

Schoenbach, K. (2001). "Myths of Media and Audiences: Inaugural Lecture as Professor of General Communication Science, University of Amsterdam." *European Journal of Communication* 16(3):361-376.

Seymour-Ure, C. (1986) "'Drawn and Quartered: The Election in Cartoons'". I. Crewe and M. Haroop (ed.) *Political Communications: The General Election Campaign of 1983.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Seymour-Ure, C. (1996). *The British Press and Broadcasting since 1945.* Oxford: Blackwell.

Seymour-Ure, C. (1997). "Editorial Opinion in the National Press." *Parliamentary Affairs* 50(4):586-608.

Seymour-Ure, C. (1998a) "Preface". J. Newton (ed.) *Political Cartoons of 1998.* London: Politico.

Seymour-Ure, C. (1998b) "Are the Broadsheets becoming Unhinged?". J. Seaton (ed.) *Politics and the Media: Harlots and Prerogatives at the Turn of the Millennium.* Oxford: Blackwell.

Shone, R. (2001). "White Femininity and the Discourse of the Nation: Re/membering Princess Diana." *Feminist Media Studies* 1(3):323-342.

Sillars, J. (1986). *Scotland. The Case for Optimism.* Edinburgh: Polygon.

Silverman, D. (1993). *Interpreting Qualitative Data: Methods for Analysing Talk, Text and Interaction.* London: Sage Publications.

Smith, A. D. (1991). *National Identity.* London: Penguin Books.

Smith, A. D. (1995). *Nations and Nationalism in a Global Era*, Cambridge: Polity Press.

Smith, A. D. (1998). *Nationalism and Modernism: A critical survey of recent theories of nations and nationalism.* London: Routledge.
Smith, A. D. (1999). *Myths and Memories of the Nation.* Oxford: Oxford University Press.
Smith, G. (1996). "Gender Advertisements Revisited: A visual sociology classic." *Electronic Journal of Sociology* 2(1).
Smith, M. (1994). *Paper Lions: The Scottish Press and National Identity.* Edinburgh: Polygon.
Spitulnik, D. (1993). "Anthropology and Mass Media." *Annual Review of Anthropology* 22:293-315.
Steenveld, L. (2002). "Transforming the media: a cultural approach." *Communicatio* 28(2):63-73.
Stovall, J. G. (1978). *The Scottish Press and Nationalism. A Content Analysis of Newspaper Attention to Nationalism, 1966-1976.* PhD Thesis, University of Tennessee.
Tanner, S. (2000). *Cartoons and corruption: can infotainment be educative?*: Paper presented at the Journalism Education Association Conference Journalism Education Futures, Queensland, Australia, 5-8 December.
Taylor, C. (1994) "The Politics of Recognition". A. Gutmann (ed.) *Multiculturalism: Examining the politics of recognition.* Princeton: Princeton University Press.
Teo, P. (2000). "Racism in the news: a Critical Discourse Analysis of news reporting in two Australian newspapers." *Discourse & Society* 11(1):7-49.
ter Wal, J., Ed. (2002). *Racism and Cultural Diversity in the Mass Media: An overview of research and examples of good practice in the EU Member States, 1995-2000.* Vienna: EUMC.
Therborn, G. (1995). *European Modernity and Beyond: The Trajectory of European Societies 1945-2000.* London: Sage.
Tonkiss, F. (1998) "Analysing discourse". C. Seale (ed.) *Researching Society and Culture.* London: Sage.
Trandafoiu, R. (2004). *Nationhood and Europeanness: Discursive Constructions in the British and Romanian Press.* PhD Thesis, Communication and Media Research Institute. London, University of Westminster.
Trenaman, J.&D. McQuail (1961). *Television and the Political Image: A Study of the Impact of Television on the 1959 General Election.* London: Methum.
Trevor-Roper, H. (1983) "The Invention of Tradition: The Highland Tradition of Scotland". E. Hobsbawm and T. Ranger (ed.) *The Invention of Tradition.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
Triandafyllidou, A. (1998). "National identity and the "other"." *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 21(4):593-612.
Triandafyllidou, A. (1999). "Nation and Immigration: a Study of the Italian Press Discourse." *Social Identities* 5(1):65-88.
Triandafyllidou, A. (2002a). *Negotiating Nationhood in a Changing Europe. Views from the Press.* Lampeter, Wales: Edwin Mellen Press.
Triandafyllidou, A., *et al.* (1997). "New Greek Nationalism." *Sociological Research Online* 2(1).
Triandafyllidou, A.&W. Spohn (2003) "Introduction". W. Spohn and A. Triandafyllidou (ed.) *Europeanisation, National Identities and Migration: Changes in Boundary Constructions between Western and Eastern Europe.* London: Routledge.
Tunstall, J. (1996). *Newspaper Power: The New National Press in Britain.* Oxford: Clarendon Press.
van Dijk, T. A. (1983). "Discourse Analysis: Its Development and Application to the Structure of News." *Journal of Communication* 33(2):20-43.
van Dijk, T. A. (1991). *Racism and the Press.* London: Routledge.
van Dijk, T. A. (1993). *Elite Discourse and Racism.* London: Sage.
van Dijk, T. A. (1997) "Political Discourse and Racism: Describing Others in Western Parliaments". S. H. Riggins (ed.) *The language and politics of exclusion: Others in discourse.* London: Sage.
van Dijk, T. A. (1998) "Opinions and Ideologies in the Press". A. Bell and P. Garrett (eds.) *Approaches to Media Discourse.* Oxford: Blackwell.
van Dijk, T. A. (2001) "Critical Discource Analysis". D. Schiffrin, D. Tannen and H. E. Hamilton (eds.) *Handbook of Discourse Analysis.* Oxford: Blackwell.
van Dijk, T. A., *et al.* (1997) "Discourse, Ethnicity, Culture and Racism". T. A. van Dijk (ed.) *Discourse Studies. A multidisciplinary introduction. Volume 2: Discourse as Social Interaction.* London: Sage.
van Leeuwen, T. (2001b) "Semiotics and Iconography". T. van Leeuwen and C. Jewitt (ed.) *Handbook of Visual Analysis.* London: Sage.
van Leeuwen, T.&C. Jewitt (2001a) "Introduction". T. van Leeuwen and C. Jewitt (ed.) *Handbook of Visual Analysis.* London: Sage.

Vihalemm, T.&M. Lauristin (1997) "Cultural Adjustment to the Changing Societal Environment: The Case of Russians in Estonia". M. Lauristin, P. Vihalemm, K. E. Rosengren and L. Weibull (eds.) *Return to the Western World: Cultural and Political Perspectives on the Estonian Post-Communist Transition.* Tartu: Tartu University Press.

Walby, S. (1996) "Woman and Nation". G. Balakrishnan (ed.) *Mapping the Nation.* London: Verso.

Watson, M. (2002). "The English Diaspora: Discovering Scotland's Invisible Migrants - 1945 to 2000." *Scottish Economic & Social History* 22(1):23-49.

Wellings, B. (2002). "Empire-nation: national and imperial discourses in England." *Nations and Nationalism* 8(1):95-109.

Wigston, D. (2002). "Aids and political cartoons: a case study." *Communicatio* 28(2):74-94.

Wishart, R., Ed. (1994). *The Best of the Scotsman*. Edinburgh: Polygon.

Wodak, R., *et al.* (1999). *The Discursive Construction of National Identity*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.

Womack, P. (1989). *Improvement and Romance: Constructing the Myth of the Highlands*. London: Macmillan.

Woolf, S. (1996) "Introduction". S. Woolf (ed.) *Nationalism in Europe, 1915 to the Present. A Reader.* London: Routledge.

Yumul, A.&U. Özkirimli (2000). "Reproducing the nation: 'banal nationalism' in the Turkish press." *Media, Culture & Society* 22(6):787-804.

Yuval-Davis, N.&F. Anthias (1989). *Woman-Nation-State*. London: Macmillan.

Zukier, H. (1996). "The Essential "Other" and the Jew: From Antisemitism to Genocide." *Social Research* 63(4):1110-1154.